## McGILL UNIVERS I T Y LIBRARY

 <br> \title{
THE <br> \title{
THE <br> H VS T OR Y OFTHE <br> RUSSIAN EMPIRE UNDER <br> Peter the Great.
} Newly tranflated from the French 0 F M. De V O L TA I R E.

I N T W O V O L U M E S.
V $\begin{array}{lllllll}\text { O } & \mathrm{L} & \mathrm{U} & \mathrm{M} & \mathrm{E} & \mathrm{I} .\end{array}$

PUBLISHED FROMA MANUSCRIPT SENT HIM BY THE COURT OF PETERSBURG.
L O NDON:

Sold by A. Millar, J. Hodges, D. Midwinter, M. Cooper, and J. and R. Tonson.


# THE <br> H I S TORY <br> OFTHE <br> RUSSIAN EMPIRE <br> UNDER <br> Peter the Great. 

Newly tranflated from the French

$$
0 \mathrm{~F}
$$

M. De V O L TAIRE.

I N T W O V O L L U M E S.
$\begin{array}{lllllll}\text { V } & \mathrm{O} & \mathrm{L} & \mathrm{U} & \mathrm{M} & \mathrm{E} & \mathrm{I} .\end{array}$

PUBLISHED FROM A MANUSCRIPT SENT HIM BY THE COURT OF PETERSBURG.

$$
\text { L } O \quad N \quad D \quad O \quad N:
$$

Sold by A. Millar, J Hodges, D. Midwinter, M. Cooper, and J. and R. Tonson.

## THE

## CO N TENTS.

SOM E particular circumfances neceflary to the 1) underftanding the life of Peter the Great, i The author's preface, 1 The introduction,
Defoription of Rufia, ..... 2.1
of Livonia, ..... 25
Of the government of Revel, Peterfourg, and Wi-
burg, ..... 26
Archangel, ..... 28
Ruffian Lapland. Of the government of Archangel, ..... 29
Moscow, ..... 32
Smolenjko, ..... 36
Of the government of Novogorod and Kiow, or theUkraine,ib.
Of the government of Belgorod, Woronitz, and Nifch-gored,39

## CO N TENTS.

African,40Orembourg, ..... 42
Of the government of Cafan and of Great Parmia,Of the government of Siberia, of the Samojedes, theOftiacks, Kamt/batka, © cc.45
CH A P. II.
Continuation of the defcription of Rufla, population, finances, armies, cuftoms. religion. State of Ruff. Ja before Peter the Great, ..... 55
of the title of Czar, ..... 63
Religion, ..... 64
Conclufion of the Alate of Rulia before Peter ..... the Great,
CH A P. III.
The ancefors of Peter the Great, ..... 73
Alexis Michaelowitz, the jon of Michael, ..... 77
Foedor, or Theodore Alexiowitz, ..... 81
CH A P. IV.
Foin and Peter. Horrible Sedition among the Stre.blitzes,84
C HA P. V.

Adminifration of the princess Sophia. Extraordinary quarrel about religion. A conspiracy, 89 CHAP.

## CONTENTS.

 CH AP. VI.The reign of Peter the firfs. Beginning of the grand reformation,

CH A P. VII.
Congress and treaty with the Chinese,
CH A P. VIII.
Expedition to the Palus Mocotis. Conquest of Aloph. The Czar lends young gentlemen into foreign countries for improvement.

CH A P. IX.
Travels of Peter the Great; 120

> CH A P. X.

A conspiracy punifbed. The Strelitzes abolifbed. Changes in cuftoms, manners, state, and church, 135
CH A P. XI.

War with Sweden. The battle of Narva,

## CONTENTS.

## CHAP. XII.

Refources after the battle of Narva. That difafter entirely repaired. Peter gains a victory near the fame place. He executes great defigns in Ruffia. The perron, who was afterwards empress, made prifoner at the facking of a city. Peter's fucceffes. His triumph at Moscow,

156

> C H A P. XIII.

Reformation at Mofcow. New fucceffes Founding of Peterfourg. The Czar takes Narva, dc.

## CHA P. XIV:

Peter the Great keeps polfefion of all Ingria, whilst Charles XII triumphs elferwhere. Rife of Menzikoff. Peterfburg fecured. The Czar executes his defigns, notwithstanding the viliories of the king of Sweden.
172.

## CH A P. XV.

While Peter is Arengthening his conquefts, and improving his dominions, his enemy Charles XII. gains feveral battles: gives laws to Poland and Saxony. Auguftus, notwithfanding a victory gained by the Ruffians, receives laws from Gbarles XII. Augufus renounces the crown, and

## C O N T ENTS.

and delivers up Patkul the Czar's ambafador. Murder of Patkul, who is condemned to be broke upon the wheel.

## C H A P. XVI.

A defign to fet up a third king in Poland. Charles XII Jets out from Saxony with a fouribing army, and pafles through Poland like a conqueror. Gruelties exercifed. Conduct of the Czar. Sucrefles of Charles XII. who at length advances to. wards Ruflia.

## C H A P. XVII.

Charles XII. crefies the Borifthenes, penetrates into the Ukraine, but does not concert his meafures properly One of his armies is defeated by Pcter the Great: be lofes his fupply of provifions and ammunition: advances forward through a defert country. His adventures on the Ukraine.

> С H A P. XVIII.

Battle of Pultowa.

## CHAP. XIX.

Confequences of the battle of Pultowa. Charles XII. takes refuge among the Turks. Augufus, whom he had dethroned, recovers bis dominions. Con. quefls of Peter the Great.

# Cratacent 6 

## Some particular CIRCUMSTANCES, necer-

 fary to the underftanding the LIFE of Peter the Great. HE many ufeful and furprizing enterprizes undertaken, and compleated by Peter I. none of which had ever entered into the imagination of any of his predeceffors, jufly intitled bim to the furname of Great. Before his time, the knowledge of the Ruffianns was wholly confined to thofe eafy arts which are the confequence of mere neceffity. So powerlul is the intfluence of habit over the bulk of mankind, and fo little defirous are they of what they do not comprehend; the genius expounds iffelf with fo, much difficulty, and is fo eafily difcouraged by the flighteft obflacles, that there is the greateft reafon to believe that all nations continued, for many ages, in a flate of the moft profound ignorance, till, at laft, fuch men as Peter the Great arofe, at fuch a period when it was moft proper they fhould appear.A young gentleman of Geneva, named Le Fort, happened accidentally to be at Mofcow, with the Danifh ambafiador, about the year 1695 . He had learned the Ruflian tongue in a very fhort time, and fpoke almof all the European languages. Pe. Vol. I.
$\Lambda$
ter
ter the Great, who was then nineteen years of age, faw Le Fort, took a liking to him, emplyed him firft as a fervant, and afterwards admitted him into the moft intimate familiarity. From him he learned, that there was another way of living and reigning than that which had always been unhap. pily eitablifhed throughout his large empire; and, had it not been for this young gentleman, Ruffia had fill continued in its primitive flate of sudenefs and barbarifm.

FETER muft have come into the world with a foul truly great, otherwife he never would have hearkened fo readily to the infiructions of a ftranger, nor been able to conquer all the prejudices of the prince and of the Ruffian. He foon obferved he bad a nation and an empire to model anew; but he was poffeffed of no means equal to the accomplifhment of fuch a difficult and noble undertakiog. From that time he came to a refolution of departing from his kingdom, and of going, like Prome* theus, to borrow the celeftial fire to animate his comparriots. He went to fearch for this heavenly fpark among the Dutch, who, about three hundred years before, were as deflitute of it as the Ruffians themfelves. He could not, however, execute his fcheme fo foon as he could have defired. He was obliged to mainrain a war againft the Turks, or rather againft the Tartars, in 1096 ; and he did not quif his realms till he had fubdued his enemies, to go and learn all the arts which were quite unknown in kuffia. The mafter of the largeft empire in the world lived almoft two years at Amiterdam, and in

## PETER the GREAT. iii

 the village of Saardam, under the name of Peter Michaeleff, though commonly called Mr Peter Bas. He ordered his name to be enrolled among the carpentrs of that famous village, which furnifhed fhips to almoft all Europe. He handled the adze and the compafs; and, after having worked in his fliop at fhip-tuilding, he ftudied geography, geometry, and hittory. The croud at firt flocked about him; but he foon checked their curiofity, by repelling his impertinent vifiters with a good deal of harfhnefs and feverity, which, however, thofe people, fo remarkable for pride and refentment, bore ve y patiently. The Dutch was the firft language he learned: he then applied bimfelf to the German, which appeared to him a very fmooth and harmonous tongue, and which he commanded to be fooke at his own court.He acquired likewife a little of the Englifh in his voyage to London; but he never underftood the French, which hath fince become the language of Pete fburg, under the Emprefs Elizabeth, in proportion as the nation has been civilized and polifhed.

He was tall; his countenance was noble and majeftic, but fometimes disfigured by convulfions, which even altered the features of his face. This defect in his organs was commonly attributed to the effects of poifon, which was thought to have been given him by his fifter Sophia: But the real poifon was the wine and brandy, in which, confiding too much in the frength of his conftitution, he frequently ia ulged himfelf to excefs.

He converfed as freely with a common workman as with the general of an army. In this he acled not like a barbarian, who makes no diffinction beiwcen men of different ranks, nor like a popular prince, who wants to ingratiate himfelf with every body; he acted like a man who wanted to acquire knowledge. He loved women as much as. his rival Charles XII. dreaded them; and, as in eating, fo in matters of gallantry, every thing was equally good. He valued himfelf much more on being able to drink a great quantity, than on porfeffing a nice and exquifite tafte, capable of diftinguilling your excellent and delicious wines.

It is commonly remarked, that kings and legiflators fhould not allow themfelves to be hurried a. way by the violence of paffion : but no man was ever more paffionate, or lefs merciful, than the Czar Peter. This is one of thofe defects in the character of kings, which they are readier to confefs than reform: at laft, however, he became fenfible of his weaknefs, and, in his fecond journey to Holland, he faid to a magilliate of that country, "I bave reformed my fubjects, but have not been able to reform myfelf." It mult be confeffed, however, that the barbarities with which he is reproached were as cuftomary at the court of Mofcow, as at that of Morocco. Nothing was more common, than to fee a Czar infliating an hundred lathes with a bull's pizzle upon the bare flhoulders of one of the firt officers of the crown, or of a maid of honour, for having neglected their duty through drunkennefs: or trying the goodrefs of his fabre by cutting off the
the head of a malefactor. Peter had performed fome of thefe Ruffian ceremonies. Le Fort, indeed, had gained fuch an afcendant over him, as to be able, fometimes, to flop his hand when he was juit upon the point of giving the blow ; but, unhappily, Le Fort was not always along with him.

His journey to Holland, and efpecially his tafte for the arts, which now began to difplay itfelf, foftened his manners a little; for it is the natural tendency of all the arts to render men more tender and fociable. He often breakfafted with a geographer, who made fea-charts with him. He fpent whole days with the celebrated Ruifch, who fift inyented the art of making thofe curious injections, which have carried anatomy to fuch great perfection, and have freed it from its former naufeoufnefs. Peter gave himfelf, to the age of twenty-two, fuch an education as a Dutch mectratic would bave given a fon in whom he perceived fome fparks of genius; and this education was far more than what any em peror of Rutfia before him had ever received. At the fame time, he fent the young Mufcovites to travel and improve themfelves in all the European nations. But his firft attempts of this nature was attended with little fuccefs. His new difciples did not imitate the example of their mafter; there was even one of them that had been fent to Venice, who never came out of his chamber, that fo he might have no caule to reproach himfelf with having feen any other country than Ruffia. Their priefts infufed into them this ftrong averfion to foreign countries, who alledged that travelling was an unpardonable f: A 3 crime
crime in a Chriftian, for the fame reafon that the Jews, in the Old Feftament, had been forbid to affume the manners of their neighbours, more rich and more induftrious than themfelves.

He left Amfterdam in $16 y^{8}$, and went to England, not in the character of a fhipwright, nor ia that of a king, but under the name of a Ruffian gentleman who travelled for his inftruction He faw and examined every thing. He even went to the Englifh theatre, though he did not underftand the language; but he found in the playhoufe an actrefs, called Mifs Grofts, from whom he received fome favours, without having the generofity to make her fortune.

King William caufed a convenient houfe to be fitted up for his accommodation, which is a very great compliment in London. Palaces are not common in that large city; there you hardly fee any thing but low houfes, with paltry gates, like thofe of our thops, without court or garden. Indifferent as the houfe was, the Czar found it too genteel ; and that he might have the better opportunity of improving himfelf in naval affairs, he took up his lodging in Wapping. He frequently put on a failor's habit, and made ufe of this difguife to engage numbers of them in his fervice.

He formed the defign of drawing the Wolga and the Tanais into the fame channel, when he was at london. He even intended to join the Dwina to thefe two rivers by a canal; and thus to re-unite the Ocean and the Black and Cafpian Seas. The Englifh whom he carried along with him ferved him
him but poorly in this extenfive project; and the Turks, who took Afoph from him in $17^{12}$, oppofed the execution of fuch an immenfe undertaking.

Happening to run fhort of money at London, the merchants of that city offered him a hundred thoufand crowns, provided he would grant them a liberty of tranfporting tobacco into Ruffia. This was not only a great noyelty in Mufcovy, but was even inconfiftent with the eftablifhed religion. The Patriarch had excommunicated all that finoked tobacco, becaufe their enemies, the Turks, fmoked? and the clergy confidered it as one of the greateft privileges of their order, to hinder the Ruffians from fmoking The Czar, however, accepted the hundred thoufand crowns; and undertook to introduce the practice of fmoking even among the clergy themfelves. He likewife refolved to make feveral other alterations in the religious fyttem.

IT is commonly a cuftom for fovereigns to make prefents to fuch noble travellers; and the prefent which King William made to the Czar was a genteel one, worthy of them both; he gave him a yacht of twenty five guns, a good failor, gilt like a Ro. man altar, and ftored with provifions of every kind; and the whole fhip's crew chearfully confented that they fhould be included in the prefent. Peter himfelf was the chief pilot in this yacht, and returned to Holland to revifit his carpenters. From thence, about the middle of the year 1698 , he went to Vienna, where he had no need to flay folong as at London, becaufe at the court of the gave Leopold there was much more ceremony to be per -
formed, and far lefs inftruction to be acquired. After having viewed Vienna, he intended to have gone to Venice, and from thence to Rome; but a rebellion, occafioned by his abfence, and by the permifion of fmoking, obliged him immediately to teturn to Mofcow. The Strelitzes, the ancient troops of the Czars, fomewhat a kin to the Janiff.ries, as turbulent, as undifciplined, not fo courageous, and as barbarous, were inftigated to revolt by fome monks and abbots, half Greeks and half Ruffians, who perfuaded them that God was highly provoked at the introduction of tobacco into Mufcory; and thus threw the whole realm into a flame about this important quarrel. Peter, who was fully ap. prized of the great power of the monks and StreTiezes, had taken his meafures accordingly. He had a numerous body of forces, compofed almoft entirely of foreigners, well difciplined, well paid, and well armed, and who fmoked under the command of General Gordon, a man who underftood the art of war thoroughly, and no friend to the monks. This was the very point in which the Sul$\tan$ Ofman had failed, when endeavouring, like Peter, to reform his Janiffaries, and having no power to oppofe their obftinate difpofition, he was fo far from being able to reform them, that he loft his life in attempting it.

Peter's armies were now put upon the fame footing with thofe of the other princes of Europe. He employed his Englifh and Dutch carpenters in building thips at Veronitz, upon the Tanais, four hundred leagues from Mofcow. He ornamented

## PETERthe GREAT.

the towns, provided for their fafety, made highways five hundred leagues in length, eftablifhed all forts of manufactures; and, what makes the profound ignorance in which the Buffians were at that time confpicuous, their principal manulacture was that of pins. They now make flowered velvets, and gold and filver ftuffs at Mofcow. Such mighty things may be performed by one man, when he is an abfolute fovereign, and knows how to exert his authority!

The war he carried on againft Charles XH. to recover the provinces which the Swedes had formerly taken from the Ruffians, notwithftanding the bad fuccefs with which it was at firft attended, did not prevent him from continuing his reformations both in church and fate ; and accordingly, at the end of 1099 , he ordered that the enfuing year fhould begin in the month of January, and not in the month of September. The Ruffians, who thought that God had formed the world in September, were amazed to hear that their Czar had power to alter what God had eftablithed. This change began with the eighteenth century, and was ufhered in by a grand jubilee, which the Czar appointed by his own authoricy; for having fupprefled the dignity of the Patriarch, he exercifed all the functions of that office himfelf. It is not true, as is commonly reported, that he put the Patriarch into the madhoufe of Mofcow. Whenever be had a mind, at once to divert himfelf and inflict punifhment, he ufed to fay to the criminal, "I make you a fool;" and the perfon to whom he gave this pretty appella-zon- ant A 5 tion,
tion, were he even the firf nobleman of the king* dom, was forced to carry a bauble, jacket, and bells, and to divert the court, in quality of his Czarifh majefty's fool. This tafk, however, he did not impofe upon the Patriarch; he contented himfelf with fimply fupprefling an employment which thofe who had enjoyed it had abufed to fuch a degree, that they obliged the emperors to walk before them once a year, holding the bridle of the patriarchal horfe; a ceremony which the Czar laid afide.

In order to have a greater number of fubjects, he refolved to have fewer monks; and accordingly commanded, that, for the future, no perfon under fifty years of age fhould be allowed to take the habit of that order; the confequence of which was, that in his time, of all the countries that contained monks, Ruffia contained the feweft; but after his dealh, this weed, which he had fo happily extirpated, fprung up afrefh; owing partly to that natural foible of all monks, the defire of enlarging their numbers, and partly to the ridiculous indulgence of fome governments, in permitting fuch a pernicious practice.

He likewife made fome prudent regulations relating to the clergy, and tending to the reformation of their lives, although his own, in all confcience, was licentious enough : but be wiely judged, that many things are allowable in a king, that would be extremely indecent in a prieft. Before his time the women were always feparated from the men. In Ruflia it was an unknown thing, that a hufband thould ever fee the lady he was to marry. The firft acquaint:nce
acquaintance be contracted with her was at church; and one of the nuptial prefents was a large handful of twigs, which the bridegroom fent to the bride, ${ }^{26}$ a kind of warning, that, on the firft fault, the had reafon to expect a little matrimonial correction. Hufbands might even kill their wives with impunity; but fuch wives as ufurped the fame tight over their hufbands were interred alive

Peter laid afide the bundle of twigs; prohibited the hufbands from killing their wives; and, in order to match the two fexes with greater prudence and equality, and by that means to make the married fate more happy, he introduced the cultom of making the men and women eat together, and of prefenting the fuitors to their miltreffes before the confummation of the nuptials. In fhort, he profecuted his falutary fchemes fo rigoroufly and refolutely, that he at laft eftablifhed the focial flate throughout all his kingdom. No one is ignorant of the regulation he made for obliging bis noblemen and their ladies to hold affemblies, where all tranfgreffions againft the Ruffian politenefs were punifhed, by obliging. the guilty perfon to drink a large glafs of brandy, fo that the honourable company frequently went home very drunk, but litcle corrected. But it was a work of no fmall merit to introduce even a kind of imperfect fociety among a peo. ple who had hitherto lived in the moft barbarous manner. He even ventured to exhibit plays The princefs Natalia, one of his fifters, wrote fome tragedies in the Ruffian language, not unlike thofe of Shakefpeare, in which tyrants and harlequins form
the chief characters. The band of mufic was compored of Ruffian fiddles, upon which they played with bulls' pizzles. They have now French comedies and Italian operas at Peterfburg; in every thing, grandeur and tafte hath fucceeded to barbarity. Une of Peter's moft difficult attempts was to thorten the coats of his fubjects, and to make them fhave their beards. This was the fubject of great murmuring, and of feveral complaints. How was it poffible to teach a whole nation to make their cloaths after the German fafhion, and to ufe the sazor? However difficult the undertaking was, it was at laft accomplifhed, by placing at the gates of every town a fufficient number of tailors and barbers; the former clipped the coats, and the latter thaved the beards, of all thofe who entered; and fuch as refufed to fubmit to thefe regulations were obliged to pay a fine equal to forty pence of our coin. But in a fhort time, the people chufed much rather to part with their beards than their money. The women, who greatly preferred a fmooth to a rough chin, affifted Peter in this reformation : to him they were obliged for being exempted from the difcipline of the whip, for being indulged with the company of the men, and for having fmoother and more decent faces to kifs.

While Peter amufed himfelf in making thefe reformations, and while he was bufied in a bloody war againlt the king of Sweden, he laid, in 1704 , the foundations of the large city and barbour of Peterfburg, in a morafs where there was not before fo much as-a fingle hut. He laboured with his
own hands in building the firft houfe; no difficulties were fufficient to leffen his ardour: workmen were obliged o come from the frontiers of Aft:acan, and from the coafts of the Black and Calpian Seas, to the coalt of the Baltic. Above an hundred thoufand men perithed in the undertaking, partly by the fevere labour they were obliged to undergo, and partly by the want and hardfhips to which they were expofed; but, notwithftanding thefe obitructions, the city was at laft raifed. The harbours of Archangel, of Aftracan, and of Veronick, were likewife erected.

To defray the expences of executing fuch extenfive projects, of fupporting fleets in the Baltic Sea, and of maintaining an hundred thoufand regular troops, the public revenue, at that time, was only about twenty millions of livres. I have feen an exact account of it, in the poffeffion of a gentleman who had been an ambaffador at Peterfburg But the wages of the workmen were proportioned to the wealth of the kingdom. It ought to be remembered, that the erection of the pyramids coft the fovereigns of Egypt nothing but onions. I repeat it again; we have only to exert our utmoft endeavours, we can never exert them enough.

After Peter had created his nation, as it were, he tiought he might take the liberty of gratifying his own humour, by efpoufing his miftrefs, who very well deferved to have him for a hufband; and accordingly the marriage was publicly folemnized, in the yeaf 1712 . This lady was the famous Ca therme, originally an orphan, born in the village of Ringen,

## xiv

Ringen, in Efthonia, brought up by a vicar out of mere charity, married to a Livonian foldier, and taken prifoner by a party of the enemy two days after her marriage. She was firft a fervant in the family of General Bauer, and afterwards in that of Menzikoff, who, from a paftry-cook's boy, became a prince of the empire, and the firft fubject in the nation. At laft the was married to Peter the Great, and, after his death, became Emprefs of Ruffia; a dignity to which her excellent virtues and abilities gave her a juft claim. She prodigioufly foftened the harflnefs of her hufband's manners ; and faved many more backs from the knout, and many more heads from the axe, than ever General Le Fort had been able to do. She was beloved and revered by the people. A German baron, a mafter of horle to an abbot of Fulda, would have difdained to have taken Catherine for a wife; but Peter thought, that with him merit did not need to be fet off by a genealogy of thirty-two defcents. Princes are apt to believe that there is no grandeur but what they confer ; and that with them every one are equal Certain it is, bisth makes no more difference between one man and another, than between one afs's father that carried dung, and another that carried relics. Education makes a great difference, talents make a greater, and tortune the greateft of all Catherine had received, from her curate of Ethonia, an education as good, at leaft, as any lady of Mofcow, or of Archangel; and the was born with greater abiJities, and with a more elevated foul. She had managed the tamily of General Bauer, and that of

## PETERTHE GREAT.

Prince Menzikoff, though fhe could neither read nor write. Whoever is capable to rule a large family, is likewife capable to rule a nation. This perhaps may feem to be a paradox; but undoubtedly it requires the fame oconomy, the fame wifdom and refolution, to command a hundred perfons, as to command thoufands.

Prince Alexis, fon to Peter, who, like hims bad efpoufed a flave, and, like him, had privately quitted Mufcovy, had not the fame fuccefs in his two undertakings. He even loft his life in an illjudged attempt to copy the example of his father. This was one of the moft fhocking acts of feverity that ever fovereign exercifed: but what reflects great honour upon the memory of the Empiefs Catherine, the had no band in the untimely end of this prince, who was fprung from another bed, and who hated every thing that his father loved: Catherme was never accufed of having acted the cruel ftepmother. The great crime of the unhappy Alexis was, that he was too much a Ruffian, and that be difapproved of all the noble and illuftrious things which his father had done for the glory and advantage of the nation. One day, as he heard fome Mufcovites complain of the hard labour they were obliged to endure in building Peterfburg, "I lake comfort, (faid he) this city fhall not fand long." When he ought to have been attending his father, in thole journeys of five or fix hundred leagues, which the Czar frequently undertook, he pretended to be fick: the phyficians purged him feverely for a dileafe with wh.ch he was not troubled; and fo
many medicines, joined to large quantities of brandy, at once impaired his health and altered his temper. He difcovered at firft an inclination to learning; he underflood geometry and hiftory, and had learned the German language ; but he neither loved war, nor would he ftudy the art of it; and this was the fault with which his father chiefly reproached him He had been married in 1711, to the Princefs of W olfenbuttle, fifter to the Emprefs, the wife of Charles IV. This marriage proved very unhappy ; the Princefs's company was often abandoned for debauch of brandy, and for the carefes of one Afrofina, a Finland girl, tall, handfome, and agreeable. Some people pretend that the Princefs died of forrow, if, indeed, it can ever be the occafion of death; and that afterwards Alexis married Afrofina privately, in 1713 , juft at the time when the Emprefs Catherine was delivered of another fon, at which he was not very well pleafed.

The difguft between the father and fon became every day more inveterate, till at laft, in $1710, \mathrm{Pe}-$ fer threatened to difinherit the Prince, and the latter declared his intention of taking the monkifh habit.
In 917 the Czar refumed his travels; as well from political views, as from the motive of curiofity; and, accordingly, he now repaired to Fiance. Had his fon been inclined to revolt, had he in reality fecured a party in his interelt, this was the time to put his fcheme in execution; bur, nftead of remaining in Puffia, and gaining partifane, he went to travel like his father, after having, with

## PETER the GREAT.

great difficulty, collected a few thoufand ducats, which he privately borrowed. He now threw himfelf into the arms of the Emperor Charles VI, the brother-in-law of his late fpoufe For fome time he lived incognito at Vienna; from thence he went to Naples, where he continued very near a whole year, without either the Czar Peter, or any one in Ruffia, knowing where he was.

WHILE the fon lay thus concealed, the father was at Paris, where he was treated with all the refpect and deference which he had met with in other nations, and with a politenefs which be could find no where but in France. If he went to fee a manufacture, and was charmed with any particular piece of work, he was fure to receive it the following day in a prefent He went to dine with the Duke d'Antin at Petithourg, where the firt thing he faw was his own picture at full length, with the fame drefs which he wore. When he went to fee the royal collection of medals, the minters ftruck feveral medals of every kind before him, and prefented them to him with great politenefs; at laft they ftruck one, which they defignedly dropped at his feet, and left him to take it up; on this he faw himfelf very elegantly engraved, with thefe words, Peter the Great; the reverfe was a Fame, with this infcription, Vires acquirit cunde; an allegory equally juft and flattering to a prince who really encreafed his knowledge by his travels.

UPon beholding the tomb and tatue of , Cardinal de Richlieu, worthy of the perfonage whom it reprefents, Peter difcovered one of thofe violent tranfports,
tranfports, and expreffed one of thofe noble rentiments, which none but exalted minds are capable of feeling. He afcended the tomb, and embracing the flatue, in an extafy exclaimed, "Great fatefman, why was you not born in my time ? I would have given you one half of my empire, to teach me to rule the other." A gentleman, poffeffed of lefs enthubafm than Peter, upon hearing, thefe words explained, which were originally pronounced in the Ruffian language, remarked, " That if he had given him one half of it, he would not have been long able to preferve the other."

After Peter had traverfed France, where evesy thing difpofes the mind to mildnefs ane clemency, he returned to his own country, and there refumed all his former feverity. Having prevailed upon his fon to leave Naples and repair to Peterfburg, the young Prince was coaducted from thence to Mofcow, and brought into the prefence of his father, who immediately deprived him of his right of fucceifion, and made him fign a folemn deed of renunciation, about the latter end of January 1718 , in confideration of which he promifed not to put bim to death.

It was not however improbable, that fuch an aft might one day be reverfed; in order, therefore, to frengthen it the more, the Czar forgerting his paternal character, and confidering himfelf only as the founder of a kingdom, which his fon perhaps might replunge into barbarity, caufed a procefs to be openly begun againft this unhappy prince, touching fome refervations he was fuppofed to have

## PETERthe GREAT. xix

made in the act of renunciation, which had been extorted from him.

An affembly of bifhops, abbots, and profeffors, was called ; thefe reverend judges found, that, in the Old Feflament, thofe who curfed their father and mother were worthy of death : that, indeed, David had forgiven his fon Abfalom, who had revolted againft him ; but that God had never pardoned him. Such was their opinion, without coming to any final determination; and yet it was the fame in fact as if they had figned a warrant for his execution. The Czarowitz had never curfed his father; he had never revolted like Abfalom; he had never lain publicly with the king's concubines; he had travelled indeed without the king's confent, and he had writ fome letters to his friends, in which he had only expreffed his hopes that they would, one day, remember him in Ruffia; but notwithftanding thofe favourable circumftances, of the hundred and twenty-four fecular judges who fat on his trial, there was not one but what voted for his death; and fuch of them as could not write caufed their names to be figned by others. A report has been fpread abroad in Europe, and it has been often committed to writing, that the Czar caufed to be trandated, from the Spanifh into the Ruffian language, the criminal procefs againft Don Carlos, that unhappy prince and heir of an immenfe kingdom, whom his father Philip II. caft into prifon, where he wretchedly died : but the truth is, there never was any procefs commenced againit Don Carlos; nor was the manner of his death, whether natural
tural or violent, ever fully known. Befides, the Czar, of all the moft defpotic fovereigne, needed not any precerlents. What is certain is, that the fon expired in his bed the day after the trial, and Peter had then at Mofcow one of the beft furnifhed apothecaries fhops in Europe. It is probable, however, that the death of the Czarowitz, the heir of the largeit kingdom in the world, and unanimoufly condenned by thofe who were now his father's fubjects, and who, had he lived, would have one day become his, might be owing to the terrible fhock which a fentence fo fatal and unprecedented muft have given to his conftitution. The father paid a vilit to his fon when juft upon the point of expiring, and is faid to have fhed fome tears. Infelix; utcumque ferent ea fata nepotes. But notwithftanoing his tears, the wheels, were covered with the broken limbs of his fon's friends. He even beheaded his own brother-in-Iaw, the Count Lapuchin, whom he had repudiated, and uncle to Prince Alexis, whofe confeffor likewife loft his head. If the Rullians have been civilized, it muft be owned they have paid dearly for their politenefs.

The remaining part of the Czar's life was fpent in the profecution of thofe great defigns, and of thofe glorious fchemes and projects that feemed to efface the memory of his cruelties, which, after all, perhaps, were abfolutely neceffary. He often made fpeeches to his cou t and council; in one of thefe he told them, that he had facrificed his on to the fafety and welfare of his domimons.

## PETER the GREAT.

After the glorious peace which he at laft concluded with Sweden, in 172 I , by which he obtained all Livonia, Eftonia, and Ingermania, and the half of Carelia, and Wibourg, the ftates of Ruflia gave him the name of Great, of Father of bis country, and of Emperor. The flates were reprefented by the fenate, who folemnly conferred thefe titles upon him in prefence of the Count de Kinki, miniften of the Emperor, of Mr . de Campredon, envoy of France, and the ambaffadors of Pruflia and Holland. The princes of Europe have been gradually accuftomed to give this title of Emperor to the Ruflian fovereign; but this dignity does not prevent the French ambafiadors from taking the right hand of thofe of Ruffia upon all occafions.

The Ruffians ought without doubt to look upon the Czar as the greateft of men. From the coafts of the Baltic Sea to the frontiers of China, he is a hero: but ought he to be regarded in the fame light among us ? Is he comparable to our Condés, or our Villars, in valour, or to an infinite number of our cotemporaries in wifdom, in genius, and in morals? No; but he was a king, and a king but indifferently educated; and he performed what, perhaps, a thoufand fovereigns in his fituation would never have done. He was poffeffed of that frength of mind which raifes a man above all forts of prejudice, as well with regard to the paft as the prefent. He was an architect who built with brick, and who, in any other nation, would have built with marble. Had he reigned in France, he would have
have carried the arts, from the condition in which they now are, to the bigheft pitch of periection. His having five and twenty large fhips on the Baltic Sea was an object of admiration: in our ports he would have had two bundred.

One may eafily jurige what he would have done at Paris, when we form a view of what he has done at Peterfburg What furprifes me the moft is, the little reafon there was to hope that fuch a man as Peter the Great fhould ever have arifen at Mofcow. It was as all the men who have ever inhabited Ruffia is to one, that a genius, fo different from the general character of their nation, would never be beflowed upon any Ruffian ; and it was till farther, as fixteen million, the number of the Ruffians at prefent, is to one, that this genius would not fall to the lot of the Czar in particular. But, notwithfanding thefe improbabilities, the thing has actually happened. A prodigious number of favourable circumftances muft have concurred; an infinite feries of ages muft have elapfed, before nature produced the man who invented the plough, or him to whom we are indebted for the art of weaving. The Ruffians, at prefent, are not furprifed at their rapid progrefs; in lefs than fifty years they have become fo familiarly acquainted with all therarts, that one would imagine they had been in poffeffion of them from remote antiquity. There are ftill large tracts of land in A fica that require the reforming hand of a Peter the Great : fuch a one may happen to come in fome millions of years; for all things come not fo foon as we would defire.


## T H E

## PREFACE.

## S E C T. I.

 \% w da that a magnificent and polite court would特 of Finfand? that the inhabitants of $\mathrm{Ca}_{2}$ fan, Solikam, and of the banks of the Wolga and Saik, would be in the rank of our befl difciplined t:oops, and obtain victories in Germany, after having conquered the Swedes and Turks? that an empire of two thoufand leagues, almolt unknown to us till then, would be polifhed in fifty years? that its influence flould extend to all the Eupopean courts; and that in year 1759, the moft zealous protector of learning would be a Ruffion? Any one who had dared to fay this would have paffed for the moft chimerical man in the world. PETER the Gkeat having alone formed the plan of this revoJution,

## PREFAC.

lution, is, perhaps, of all princes, he, whofe actions deferve moft to be handed down to pofterity.

THE court of Peterfburg has favoured the author employed in this work with all the authentic documents. It is mentioned in the body of this hiflory, that thefe memoirs are depofited in the public library at Geneva, a city much frequented, and in whofe neighbourhood this hiftorian refides; but fince his whole inftructions, nor the intire journal of Peter the Great have yet been communicated to him, he has thought proper to keep thefe records at his own houfe, which are fhewn to all the curious, with the fame facility as they would have been by the keepers of the public library at Geneva; and the whole will be depofited there as foon as the fecond volume is finifled.

The public already have fome pretended hiftories of Peter the Great, moft of which have been compofed from news-papers. That which has been publifhed at Amflerdam, in four volumes, under the name of the Boyard Neftefuranoy, is one of thofe too much frequented typographical frauds. Such are the memoirs of Spain, printed under the name of Don Juan de Colmenar, and the hiftory of Lewis XIV. compiled by the Jefuit La Motte, from the pretended memoirs of a minititer of ftate, and imputed to La Martiniere: fuch are the hiltories of prince Eugene, count Bonneval, and many others,

IT is thus the fine art of printing is made fubfervient to a commerce the moft deipicable. A Dutch bookfeller orders a book to be wrote, juff as a manufacturer would order his fervants to work him

## $\begin{array}{lllllll}P & R & E & F & A & C\end{array}$

a piece of cloch; and unluckily there are writers whofe neceffity obliges them to fell their labour to thefe merchants, as journeymen for hire. Hence arife all thore infipid panegyrics and defamatory libels, with which the public are opprefied; which is one of the moft fhameful vices of our age.

Never did hiflory fand more in need of authentic proofs than at-prefent, when they fo infolently traffic with fallhood. The author who now gives to the public the Hiftory of the Ruffian Empire under the reign of Peter the Great, is the fame perfon who thirty years ago wrote the hiftory of Charles XII from the memoirs of many people of public character, who had long lived near this monarch. The prefent hiftory is a confirmation of, and fupplement to the former.

We think ourfelves here obliged, by a refpect to the public, and to truth, to publith an undeniable teltimony, which will thew what credit ought to be attributed to the hiftory of Charles XII.

THE king of Poland, and duke of Lorrain, not long ago made that work be read over again to him at Commercy; be was fo ftruck with the truth of fo many actions which he bad been witnefs of, and fo angry at the infolence with which they had been called in queftion, in fome libels and journals, that "he was pleated to ftrengthen, by the feal of his own depofition, the credit which the biftorian deferves; but not being able to write himfelf, he madeone of his principal olficers draw up the following certificate. *

[^0]
## PREFACE.

"We lieutenant-general of the king's armies, " grand-marefchal of the houfhold to his Polifh ma" jefty, and commandant of Toul, of the two Bars? "Scc. certify, that his Polinh majelly, after having " heard the hiftory of Charles XII. read, wrote by or M. de V — (the laft Geneva edition), not on"ly praifed the ftile-of that hiftory, and ad" mired thofe ftrokes - which characterife all " the compofitions of that illuftrious author; but " has alio done us the honour to declare, that he " was ready to give a certificate to M de V—_ in " order to atteft the truth of the facts contained in is this hiftory. This prince moreover adds, that "M. de V - has not forgot or mifplaced any in" terefling circumftance; and that every thing in "this hiftory is true, and in its proper order; that "s he has treated of Poland, and all the events which "S have happeried there, \&cc. as if he had been an - eye-witnefs. We further certify, that this prince "s has ordered us to write immediately to M. de os V_t to inform him of what we have juf heard; " and affure him of his majelty's elleem and friend" thip.
" THE great efteem we have for the reputation " of M. de V and which every man of honour "s ought to have for teftimonies which atteft the " truth of facts contained in contemporary biftoriee, " has engaged us to afk leave from the king of Po" land to fend M. de V - a certificate in form, " of every thing which his majefty has done us the
for it is evident that thefe are ouing bat to the indulgence and goodnefs of the prince, for which reafon I have redeced myfclf folly to tho weftiniony given in favour of the trath.
" honour to mention. The king of Poland not "s only confented to it, but even commanded us to " fend it, defiring M. de V- to make ufe of it " as often as he thinks proper, either by commu"s nicating it, printing it, \&cc."
"Done at Commercy, this inth day of July, ${ }^{6} 1759$.
"The Count de Tressan,"
This act being fent to the author, furprized him fo much the more agreeably, as it came from a king, as well acquainted with all thefe events as Charles XII. himfelf; and who, befides, is fo well known in Europe for his love for truth, and benevolence.

We bave alfo a multitude of authentic teftimonies concerning the hiftory of the age of Lewis XIV. a work no leis true and important, wherein tbe author breathes the fpirit of patriotifm ; yet his refpect for his country has no where inticed him to conceal the truth, nor ever prompted him to amplify the good, or difguife the evil; a work compofed without intereft, hope or fear, by a perfon whofe fituation in life bas placed him above flattering any body.

There are but few quotations in the age of Lewis XIV. becaufe the events in the begioning of that period are known to every body, and wanted only to be put in their proper light; and as for the later events, the author has been a witnefs of them himfelf. On the contrary, in the hittory of the Ruffian empire, he always quotes his vouchers, the chief of

- whom is P_iER the Great himfelf.


## S E C T. II.

We have not given ourfelves the unneceflary trouble, in this Hiftory of Peter the Great, of vainly inquiring into the origin of the many nations. which compofe the immenfe empire of Ruffa, from the Kamthatka to the Baltic fea. It would be a firange undertakingtrattempt to prove, by authentic pieces, that the Huns formerly came from the north of China into Siberia; and that the Chinefe themfelves are a colony of Egyptians. I know that fome philofophers of great merit feem to think that there is a kind of conformity between thefe nations; but we have been too much deceived by their conjectures, which fome have even attempted to convert into certainty.

ThUs, for example, they at prefent pretend to prove, that the Egyptians are the fathers of the Cbinefe. an antient aothor has related, that Sefoltris the Egyptian wett as far as the river Ganges; now if he went fo far, he wight go to China, which is at a great diftance from the Ganges; therefore he went thitier; but China was not peopled at that time, it is therefore evident that Sefoftris peopled it. The Egyptians in their feafts ufed lighted candles, the Chinefe, tanthorns; therefore we caunot doubt that the Chinefe are an E.gyptian colony. Moreover, the Chinefe have a large river, the Egyptians likewife have one. In thort, it is evident, that the firft kings of Cbisha got their names from the antient knggs of Egypt; for ia the name of the fanily $Y_{u}$
we may find characters, which, ranged in another manner, form the word Menes It is then indifputable that the emperor $Y u$ took his name from Menes king of Egypt, and the emperor $K i$ is evidently king Atoës, by changing $k$ into $a$, and $i$ into toës.

But if a learned man of either Tobolki or Pekin was to read fome of our books, he might prove much more demonftratively, that the French defcended from the Trojans. And thus he might prove it, and aftonifh his countrymen by his profound refearches. The moft antient and moft refpected books in that little country of the weft, called France, he might fay, are romances; they were written in a pure language, derived from the antient Romans, who have never told a fallity. Now, more than twenty of thefe authentic books depofe, that Francus, the foun * der of the French monarchy, was the fon of Hector. The name of Hector has been preferved ever fince in that nation, and even in this prefent century, one of ber greateft generals is called Hector de Villars.

The neighbouting nations have acknowledged this truth fo unanimoully, that Ariofto, one of the mofl leaned Italians, declares in his Orlando, that the knights of Charlemagne fought for Hector's belmet. In thort, we have a proof which needs no reply; for the antient. Franks, to perpetuate the memory of the I'rojans, their fathers, built a new city of Eroy in Champagne; and thefe new Tro. jans have aiways preferved fo great an averfion for the Greeks their enemies, that there is not at pre-
fent
fent in that town four people who have learned Greek. They have never received the Jefuits among them, probably becaufe they have heard that fome of them formerly explained Homer in their fchools.

IT is certain that fuch arguments might make a great impreffion at Pekin and Tobolfki; but in the like manner another learned perfon might overturn the whole affair, by proving, that the Parifians defcended from the Greeks: For, he would fay, the firlt prefident of a court of judicature at Paris was called Achille du Harlai. Achille certainly is derived from the Greek Acbilles, and Harlai comes from Arifos, by changing ifos into lai. The Elyfian fields, which are ftill near one of the gates of the city, and mount Olympus, which is ftill to be feen near Meziére, are monuments which the moft obflinate credulity cannot withftand. Befides, the A thenian cuftoms are preferved in Paris; they there judge of comedies and tragedies as fuperficially as shey do at Athens; they crawn generals of armies on the theatre, as in Athens; and, in fhort, Marfhal Saxe publiciy received a crown from the hands of an actrefs, which could not be given to him in the cathedral. The Parifians have academies, which are derived from thofe of Athens; as likewife churches, a liturgy, parifhes, and diocefes, all Greek inventions; and the words themfelves derived from the Greek; even the diftempers of thefe people have their names derived from the Greek, fuch as apoplexy, pbthific, peripneumony, cachexy, difentry, jealousy, \&c.

We muft confefs, that thefe fentiments will ftrengthen much the authority of the wife perfonage who bas jut demonftrated, that we were a colony of Trojans; thefe two opinions will be fill combated by other profound antiquarians; fome will fhew that we are Egyptians, feeing that the worfhip of Ifis was eftablifhed in the village of Ilis, on the road betwixt Paris and Verfailles; others will prove, that we are Arabs, as appears by the words almanac, alembic, algebra, admiral. The Chinele and Siberian literati would be very much perplexed to decide it, and would very likely leave us juft what we are.

IT appears then, that the origin of all nations is involved in this uncertainty. It is the fame in regard to a whole people as with one particular family; many German barons pretend to be defcended, in a direct line, from Arminius; in like manner they have compofed for Mahomet a genealogy, by which he fprang from Abraham and Hagar.

Thus the family of the ancient Czars of Ruffia was faid to come from Bela, king of Hungary; this Bela from Attila, Attila from Turck, father of the Huns; and this Turck was the fon of Faphet. His brother Ru/s founded the throne of Ruffia, and another brother, named Cameri, eftablithed his dominion towards the Wolga.

All thefe fons of Japhet were, as every one knows, the grandfons of Noah, whofe three fons made what feeed they could to eftablifh themeives at a thoufand leagues diftance from each other, in onder to prevent all fort of mutual affiftance, and
probably
probably begot by their fifters fome millions of in. habitants in a very few years

MANY grave writers have exaclly traced thefe defcents with the fame fagacity as when they dif. covered bow the Japanele had peopled Peru. Hiftory has been a long time written in this tafte, which has not been followed either by the Prefident de Thou or Rapin-Thoyras.

## S E C T. II.

IF we munt be upoh our guard with refpect to the hiftorians who afcend to the tower of Babel, and to the deluge, we ought not lefs to miftruft thofe who partícularize every modern hiftory, who enter into all the fecrets of minifters, and who unhappily give you' an exact account of every battle, which even the very generals' themfelves would find a very great difficulty to do.

There have been fought fince the beginning of the laft century near two hundred capital battles in Europe, the moft of them more fatal than the batties of Arabella and Pharfalia; yet as very few of thefe actions have had any great confequences, they are loft to pofterity. If there was but one book in the world, children would know by heart every line, and would be able to tell all the fyllables of it; in like manner, if there had been but one battle, the name of each foldier would be known, and his genealogy would pafs to the lateft pofterity: but in fuch a long, and almoft uninterrupted fucceffion of bloody wars amongit Chriftian princes, the ancient interefts
interefts have all changed, and are effaced by new ones; battles fought twenty years ago are forgot by thofe of the prefent time; juft as in Paris, the news of yefterday is fmothered by that of to day, which in its turn will be loft in that of to-morrow ; thus almoft all events are precipitated one upon another into eternal oblivion. This is a reflexion which we cannot dwell too much upon; it ferves to confole us in the misfortunes which we are fubject to, and fhews us the vanity of human things. There remains nothing in hiftory worthy to fix the attension of men, but the ftriking revolutions which have changed the manners and laws of great ltates; and upon this account the hiftory of Peter the Great deferves to be known.

If: we have dwelt too long on the particulars of battles and fieges, which refemble other military operations of the fame nature, we afk pardon of the philofophic reader, and have no other excufe, excepi, that thefe fmall actions are connected with the great ones, and muft neceffarily be joined in the narration.

We have refuted Norberg in fome palfages, which have appeared to us the moft important ; but have fuffered him to enjoy his miftakes with impunity in matters of lefs moment.

$$
\mathrm{S} E \quad \mathrm{C} \quad \mathrm{~T} . \quad \text { IV. }
$$

We have made the hiftory of Peter the Great as concife and as cop ous as poffible. There are hiftories of little province, fmall cities, and even

$$
\text { B } 5 \text { of }
$$

$$
12
$$ $\begin{array}{llllll}P & R & E & A & C\end{array}$

of convents of monks, that take up many volumes in folio; the memoirs of a certain abbot, who retired into Spain, where he had fcarcely done any thing worthy of notice, are comprized in feven volumes, while one is fufficient for the life of Alexander the Great.

There may be yet fome childifh men, who love the fables of Ofiris, Bacchus, Hercules, and Thefeus, confecrated by antiquity, better than the true hiftory of a modern prince; either becaufe the ancient names of Ofiris and Hercules flatter the ear more than that of Peter; or that the overthrowing of giants and lions pleafe a weak imagination more than laws and ufeful undertakings; and yet we muft confers, that the defeat of the giant Epidaurum, and of Sinnis the robber, and Crommion's fow, are not equal with the exploits of Charles XII, the founder of Peterfburg, and the legiflator of a moft redoubtable empire.

IT is true, the antients have taught us to think juflly, but it would be very ftrange to prefer $A$. nacharfis, the Scythian, becaule of his antiquity, to the modern Scythian, who has polifhed fo extenfive a country. We cannot fee why the legiflator of Ruffia ought to yield to Lycurgus and Solon. Are the laws of the latter, which recommend the love of boys to the citizens of Athens, and forbid it to the flaves; or thofe of the former, which command the girls to, box quite naked in public, preferable to the laws of him who civilized the people of both fexes in his dominions for focrety ; who cre-
ated military difcipline by land and fea, and opened a paffage for all arts into his native country ?

This hiffory contains the tranfactions of his public life, which were ufeful; not thofe of his private life, of which we have but few anecdotes, and thofe fufficiently known It would not become a ftranger to difclofe the fecrets of his clofet, his bed, or his table. If any one could have given fuch anecdotes, it would have been prince Menzikof, or general Sheremetow, who have been long intimately acquainted with him; but they have not done. this; therefore all that which is at prefent fupport* ed but by public reports, is not worthy of credic: Men of fenfe would choofe rather to fee a great man labouring twenty five years for the good of an extenfive empire, than be informed, in a very uncer: tain manner, of the foibles which this great man might have in common with the: meaneft of his people.

## S E C T. V.

In what relates only to the fille, criticifm, or evers: the reputation of an author, it is better to let the little tribe of pamphleteers indulge their malignity; for we fhould become almoft as ridiculous as them, if we were to fpend time in anfwering them, or ee ven in reading their productions: but when we difpute about important affairs, it is fometimes neceflary that truth Chould defcend fo low as to confound the falthood of difdainful wretches; their fcandal ought no more to binder her from clearing herfelf, than the B. 6 bafeners

## 14 P R E F A C E.

bafenefs of a criminal, among the dregs of the people, Thould hinder the courfe of juftice from acting againft him. It is by this double reafon then, that we have been obliged to filence that ignorant rafcal, who has corrupted the hiftory of Lewis XIV by notes, as abfurd as fcandalous, in which be brutally infults a branch of the houfe of France, all the houfe of Auftria, and a bundred other illuftrious families in Europe, whofe very anti-chambers are as much unknown to him, as the facts which he has prefumed to fallify.

This facility of punifhing calumnies, is miffortunately, one of the greateft inconveniencies attached to the art of printing.

Le Vaffor, a prieft of the oratory, and La Motte, a Jefuit; the one a beggar in England, the other in Holland, both wrote hiftory for their livelihood. The one choie Lewis XIII. king of France, for the object of his fatire, and the other Lewis XIV. Their change of religion was not adapted to recommend them to the public as men of veracity; neverthelefs, it is droll to fee with what confidence they declare that they are intrufted with the depofitum of truth, continually repeating this maxim, "That "an hiftorian thould boldly tell the whole truth." But they ought to have added, that he fhould begin by being informed of it himfelf.

Their own maxim condemns them; but even this maxim deferves to be examined, fince it becomes an excule for all fatixifls.

All truths of importance or public utility ought,

$$
\begin{array}{lllll}
\mathbf{P} & \mathbf{R} & \mathbf{F} & \mathbf{A} & \mathbf{E} \text {. }
\end{array}
$$

ought; doubtlefs, to be told; but if there fhould be any odious anecdote, relating to a prince; if within his own domeftic inclofure he has been guilty, like many private people, of fome human frailties, known perhaps to one or two confidents; who is it that commands you to reveal to the public what thefe two confidents are intrufted with? I will grant that you have penetrated into this myftery : but why fhould you tear the veil with which every man has a right to cover the receffes of his own houfe? And for what reafon do you publifh this feandal? To flatter the curiofity of men, you will anfwer, to pleafe their malignity, and to fell my book, which, without that, would not be read. You are then only a defamer, a libeller, a feller of detraction, and not an hiftorian.

If this weaknefs of a man, in public life; if this fecret vice, which you feek to publifh, has any influence over the public affairs; if it has caufed the lofs of a battle, difordered the finances of the tate, or made the citizens unhappy, you ought to fpeak of it. It is your duty to difcover the minute caufe of fuch great events; otherwife you ought to be filent.
"Ler no truth be concealed," is a maxim which may allow many exceptions; but here is one, which will admit of none, " Fell nothing to "polterity but what is worthy of potterity."

$$
\mathrm{S} \quad \mathrm{E} \quad \mathrm{C} \quad \mathrm{~T} . \quad \text { VI. }
$$

Besides falfroods in facts, there is alfo a falfhood
hood in characters The madnefs of loading hifo tory with thefe portraits began in France with the writing of romances. It was Clelia who firft introduced this fahion. Sarrazin, juf upon the dawn of good tafte, wrote the hiftory of the confpiracy of Walfein, who had never been concerned in any plot; he fails not, in drawing the character of that general, whom he had never feen, to tranllate al. moft all that Salluft has faid of Cataline, whom that Roman hiftorian had often feen. This is writing hiftory in an ingenious manner; but he who takes fo much pains to fhew his wit, does no more than fhew it ; which is no great matter.

Cardinal de Retz might, with propriety, give the characters of the principal perfonages of his time, as he had been intimately acquainted with them, who had been either his friends or his enemies. He has not painted them, it is true, in thofe glaring colours with which Maimbourg has embellifhed the romantic hiftories of princes in paft ages. But was he a faithful painter ? Did not pafion, and the love of fingularity, fometimes guide his pencil ? Uught he, for example, thus to have exprefied himfelf in refpect to the queen, mother of Lewis XIV? "S She had as much wit as was "f fufficient for her to appear foolith to the eyes of " thofe who did not know her: she had more of fournefs than pride, more pride than grandeur, st more outward fhow than reality, more regard to "s money than liberality, more liberality than felf6s ithnefs, more felfithefs than difinterelterinefs, os more attachment than paffion, more inientibulity
as than cruelty, more fup ftition than real piety, " more flubbornefs than iteadinefs, and more in" capacity than of all the reft"

We muft confefs, that the obfcurity of thefe expreffions, the multitude of antithefes and comparatives, and this burlefque way of painting, fo unworthy of hiftory, can never pleafe thofe of a good underftanding. Thofe who love truth, doubt much of the exactnefs of the character, in comparing is with the queen's; and virtuous minds are alfo thock. ed with the ill-nature and difdain which the hiftorian difplays in fpeaking of a princels, who had loaded him with fo many favours, and are very angry to fee an archbifhop engaged in a civil war, merely, as he himfelf fays, for the pleafure it gave bim.

If we are to diftruft characters, drawn even by thofe who are fo well qualified for that talk, how can we believe an biftorian who affects to penetrate into the fecrets of a prince, who, perhaps, lived at the diftance of fix hundred leagues from him? de fhould in this cafe defcribe him by his actions, and leave to thofe who have been a long time near his peifon to tell the reft.

HARANGUES are another kind of oratorical lying, in which biftorians formerly indulged themfelves. They made their heroes fay what was poffible for them to have faid. I his liberty indeed might have been taken with a perfon of fome antiquity, but at preient theie fictions are no longer tolerated; nay, we go itill farther, for if any barangue were to be put into the mouth of a prince who

18 P R E FA CE.
never pronounced it, the hiftorian would be confidered as a rhetorician

A third kind of lying, and indeed the mot rude, but which has been a long time the molt feducing, is that of the marvelous; it bears fay in all antient hiftories, not one excepted.

We fill meet with forme predictions in the hiftory of Charles XII of Norberg: but we find none in any of the judicious hiftorians who have wrote in this century; omens, prodigies and apparitions, are banifhed into the regions of fable. For hiftory flood in no need to be enlightened by philosophy.


## THE

## INTRODUCTION.

 Ph dia the vulgar knew no other hero in the ov you north but Charles XII. His perfonal valour, which was much more like that of a private foldier than that of a king, the noife of his victories, and likewife of his misfortunes, made an impreffion on thofe who are eafily ftruck with great events, but are not fo clear fighted in regard to more flow and ufeful labours. Peter the First would be able to go through with his great undertakings; yet they have not only fubfifted, but have been improved, efpecially under his daughter the emprefs Elizabeth. This empire is at prefent reckoned amongft the moft flourifhing ftates, and Peter is in the rank of the greateft legiflators: although his undertakings had no need of fuccefs from the approbation of the learned, yet his fuccefs has ftrengthened his glory for ever. At prefent we judge that Charles XII. deferved to have the firft poft under Peter the Great; the one has left nothing but ruins, and the other

20 INTRODUCTION.
is a founder of an empire in every refpect. Such was the judgment I ventured to pais thirty years ago, when I wrote the hiftory of Charles XII. The memoirs with which I have been furnifhed concerning Ruffia puts me in a condition to make known this empire, whofe people are fo antient, while their laws, manners, and arts, are of a new greation.

THE
H I S T O R YOFTHE
RUSSIAN EMPIRE
UN DER
PETERthe GREAT.
C H A P. I.
Defoription of R USSIA.
R in the univerfe; it extends from eaft to weft for more than two thouland leagues, and from north to fouth more than eight hundred. It borders Poland and the Frozen fea, and joins Sweden and China. Its length from the iffe of Dago, in the weft of Livonia, to its eaftermoft bounds, contains near one hundred and feventy degrees; fo that when it is mid-day in the weft of this empire, it
is very near midnight in the eaft. Its breadth from fouth to north is three thoufand fix hundred werfts, which is eight hundred and fixty of our common leagues.

So little were we acquainted with the bounds of this country in the paft century, that when we heard in the year $168 y$, that the Chinefe and Ruffians were at war, and that the emperor Cam-hi on the one fide, and the Czars Ivan and Peter on the other, had fent their refpective ambaffadors to meet within three hundred leagues of Pekin, upon the boundaries of the two empires; to terminate their difference, we at firft treated this event as fabu, lous.

The country which is at prefent comprifed un der the name of Rullia, or the Ruffias, is larger than. all the relt of Europe, or than ever the Roman empire was, or that of Darius, conquered by Alexander; for it contains more than one million one hundred fquare leagues. The Roman empire, and that of Alexander, contained each about five hundred and filty thoufand, and there is not a kingdom in Europe the twelfth part. fo extenlive as the Roman empire; but it would require whole ages, even under a race of fuch aufpicious monarchs as Peter the Great, to make it as populous, pientiful, and well inhabited as our fouthern countries.

The Englifh ambaffador who refided at Peterfburg in I/ 32 , and who had been at Madrid, fays, in his manufcript relation, that in Spain, which is the leaft populous ftate in Europe, there may be reckoned forty perfons to every fquare mile, and in

## OFRUSSIA.

Ruffia not above five. We dall fee, in the fecond chapter, whether this minifter was miftaken. MarThal Vauban, the greateft of engineers and the beft of citizens, is of opinion, that in France, every fquare mile contains two hundred inhabitants. Thefe calculations are never very exact, but they ferve to flew the furprifing difproportion in the populournefs of two different countries.

I shall oblerve here, that from Peteifburg to Pekin, there is hardly one mountain to be met with in the route which the caravans might take through independant Tartary, and that from Peterfurg to the north of France, by the road of Dantzick, Hamburg, and Amitterdam, there is not even a hill of any eminence to be feen. This obfervation leaves room to doubt of the truth of that fyitem, which makes the mountains to have been formed by the rolling of the waves of the fea, and fuppofes all that is at prefent dry land, to have been for a long time covered with water: but how comes it to pafs, that the waves, which, according to this fuppofition, formed the Alps, the Pyrenees and Mount Taurus, did not likewife form fome eminence or hill from Normandy to China, which is a winding face of above three thoufand leagues? Geography, thus confidered, may furnifh lights to riatural philufophy, or at leaf give room for rational doubts.
formerly we called Ruffia by the name of Mufcovy, from the city of Mofcow, the capital of that empire, and the refidence of the grand dukes: but at prefent the ancient name of Ruffis prevails.

Ir is not my bufnefs in this place to enquire, why
why the countries from Smolenfko, to the other fide of Mofcow, were called White Ruflia, or why Hubner gives it the name of Black, or for what reafon the government of Kiow fhould be named Red Ruflia.

It is probable that Madies the Scythian, who made an irruption into Afia, near feven centuries before our vulgar æra, might have carried his arms into thefe regions, as Genzis-Khan, and Tamerlane have done fince, and as probably others had done long before Madies. Every part of antiquity is not deferving of our enquiries; that of the Chinefe, the Indians, the Perfians, and the Egyptians, are afcertained by illuftrious and interefting monuments: but thefe monuments fuppofe others of a more ancient date, fince many ages are neceffary to teach them the art of tranfmitting their thoughts by permanent figns, and no lef time was required to form a regular language; and yet we have no fuch monuments, even in this polite part of Europe. The ait of writing was a long time unknown to all the north : the patriarch Conftantine, who wrote the hiftory of Kiow in the Ruffian language, confefies, that the ufe of writing was not known in thefe countiies in the filth century.

Let others examine whether the Huns, the Slavi, and the fartars, formerly conducted their wandering and familhed tribes towards the fource of the Boryithenes; my defign is to defcribe the new world which the Czar Peter created, and not to engage in ufelefs attempts to clear up the chaos of antiquity. We fhould always keep in mind, that
no family upon earth knows its firf founder, and confequently, that no nation knows its firf origin.

I USE the name of Ruffians to defignate the in habitants of this great empire. That of Roxolanians, which was formerly given them, would indeed be more fonorous, but it is neceffary we fhould conform to the cuttom of the language in which we write. Gazettes and other memoirs have for fome time ufed the word Ruflians; but as this name has too great a likenefs to that of Pruffians, I thall abide by that of Rufs, which almoft all our authors have given them. Befides, it appeared to me, that the moft extenfive people of the world ought to be known by fome appellation that may diftinguifh them abfolutely from all other nations.

THis empire is at prefent divided into fixteen large governments, that will one day be fubdivided, when the northern and eaftern countries come to be more inhabited.

These fixteen governments, which contain feveral immenfe provinces, are the following :

## L I V O N I A.

THE neareft province to Britain is that of Li vonia, one of the moft fruitful of the north. In -the twelfth century the inhabitants were Pagans; at which time certain merchants of Bremen and Lu* bee traded to this country; and a body of religious crufaders, called Port-Glaives, (or fword-bearers) who were afterwards incorporated in the Teutonic order,

## 26 THE HISTORY

order, took poffeffien of this province, in the thir teenth century, at the time when the fury of the crulades armed the Chriftians againft all who were not of their religion. Albert, margrave of Brandenburgh, grand mafler of thefe religious conquerors, made himfelf fovereign of Livonia and Bran-denburg-Pruffia, towards the year 1514. From that time, the Ruffians and Poles contended for the poffeffion of this province. Soon afterwards it was invaded by the Swedes, and for a long while con. tinued to be ravaged by thefe feveral powers. Guf. tavus Adolphus having conquered it, it was then ceded to the Swedes in 1660 , by the famous peace of Oliva ; and, at length, Czar Peter took it, as will be feen in the courfe of this hiftory.

Courland, joining to Livonia, is ftill in vaf. falage to Poland, though it depends greatly upon Ruflia. Thefe are the weftern limits of this empire in Chriftendom. Wyburg.

MORE towards the noth is the government of Revel and Lfthonia. Revel was built by the Danes in the thirteenth century. The Swedes were in peffefion of Efihonia, from the time that this countiy put itfelf under the protection of that crown, in 1561 . This is another of the conquefts of Peter the Great.

On the borders of Efthonia lies the gulph of Finland.

## OFRUSSIA.

land. To the eaftward of this fea, and at the junction of the Neva with the lake Ladoga, is fituated Peterfburg, the moft modern and beft built city in the whole empire, built by Czar Peter, in fpite of all the united obflacles which oppofed its foundation.

This city is fituated on the gulph of $K_{\text {ronftat }}$ in the midft of nine rivers, by which its different quarters are divided. In the centre of this city is an almoft impregnable caftle, built on an ifland, formed by the great courfe of the river Neva: feven canals are drawn from the rivers, and wafh the walls of the royal palace of the admiralty, of the dockyard for the gallies, and of feveral buildings of manufactories. Thirty-five great churches help to adorn the city; among which, five are for foreigners, of the Roman Catholic, Calvinift, and Lutheran religions: thefe are as fo many temples erected for toleration, and as examples to other nations. There are five palaces; the old one, called the fummerpalace, fituated on the river Neva, has a very large and beautiful ftone baluftrade, which runs all along the river fide. The new fummer palace near the triumphal gate, is one of the finett pieces of architecture in Europe. The admiralty buildings, the fchool for cadets, the imperial college, the academy of fciences, the exchange, the merchants warehoufes, and the dock-yards, are all magnificent fructures. The town houfe, the public difpenfary, where all the veffels are made of porcelain, the court magazines, the foundery, the arfemal, the bridges, the markets, the fquares, the barracks for the horfe and VOL. I.

C
foot
foot guards, contribute at once to the embellifhment and fafery of the city, which is faid to contain at prefent four hundred thoufand fouls. In the environs of this city are feveral pleafyre houfes, whefe magnificence aftonifhes all travellers. These is one in farticular which has water-works far fuperior to thofe of Verfailles. There was nothing of all this in 1702 , the whole being then an impaffable mosafi. Peterfbug is confidered as the capital of In gria, a fmall province fubdued by Peter I. Wyburg, another of his corquefs, and that part of Finland which was loft, and ceded by the Swedes in 1742 , makes another government.

## $A R C H A N G E L$.

Highef up mounting towards the north, is the province of Archangel, a country quite new to the fouthern nations of Europe, It took its name from St. Michael the Archangel, under whofe protection it was put long after the Ruflizns had embraced Chriftianty, which did not happen till the begiming of the eleventh century : and this province was not known to the other nations of Europe till the nididle of the fixteenth. The Eng* lifh, in 1533, endeavouring to find out a northeaft paflage to the Eaft Indies, Chancellor, captain of one of the thips equipped for that expedition, difcovered the port of Archangel in the White Sca; at that time it was a defeit place, having only one convent, and a fimall charch, dedicated to St Michael the Archangol.

## OFRUSSIA.

The Englih running up the river Dwina, arrived at the midland part of the country, and at length at Mofow. Here they eafily made themfelves mafters of the Ruffian commerce, which was removed from the city of Novogorod to this feaport, which is inacceffible indeed during feven months in the year ; but, neverthelefs, this trade proved more beneficial to the empire, than the fairs of Novogorod, that had fallen to decay in confequence of the wars with Sweden. The Englifh obtained the privilege of trading thither without paying any duties; a manner of trading which is apparently the moft beneficial to all nations. The Dutch foon came in for a fhare of the traffic to Archangel, then unknown to other nations.

Long before this time, the Genoefe and Venetians had opened a trade with the Ruffians by the mouth of the Tanais or Don, where they had built a town called Tana. This branch of the Italian commerce was deftroyed by the ravages of Tamerlane : but that of Archangel fubfifted, with great advantages both to the Englifh and Dutch, till the time that Peter the Great opened a paffage into his dominions by the Baltic fea.

## RUSSIAN LAPLAND.

Of the Government of ARCHANGEL.
Towards the weft of Archangel, and within its government, is Ruffian Lapland, the third part
of this country, the two others belonging to Sweden and Denmark. This is a very large track, occupying about eight degrees of longitude, and extending in laritude from one polar circle to the North Cage. The inhabitants of this country were confufedly known to the ancients, under the name of Troglodytes and northern pigmies; names fuitable enough to men, who, for the moft part, are not above four feet and an half high, and dwell in caverns; they are now juft the fame people they were in former times. They are of a tawny colour, though the other people of the north are white ; and for the mott part of a very low fize, though their neighbours, and the people of Iceland, under the polar circle, are tall: they feem made for their mountainous country, being nimble, foout, and robuft; their fkins are hard, the better to refirt the cold, their thighs and legs are flender, their feet fmall, to enable them to run more nimbly amongft the rocks, with which their country is covered; they are paflionately fond of their own country, which none but themfelves can be pleafed with, and cannot live any where elfe. Some have affirmed, upon the credit of O laus, that there people were originally natives of Finland, that they retired into Lapland, where they diminifhed in theif fize; but this could not be otherwife, for why could not they have made ufe of lands lefs northerly, where the conveniences of life were to be had in greater plenty? How comes it that they difier fo much from their pretended ancefiors in features, figure, and complexion ?

Thus one might, with as great reafon fay, that the grafs which grows in Lapland, is produced from that of Denmark, and that the filhes peculiar to their lakes, were the fpawn of thofe which came from Sweden. It is more likely that the Laplanders are like their animals, the produce of their own country, and that nature has made the one for the other.

Those who inhabit the borders of Finland, have adopted fome of the expreffions of their neighbours, which happens to all people: but when two nations give to things of common ufe, and eftablifhed cuftoms, names abfolutely different, it is a ftrong prefumption, that one of them is not a colony from the other. The Findlanders call a bear Karu, the Laplanders, Muriet : the fun in Finland is called Auringa, in Lapland Beve. Here is not the leaft analogy. The inhabitants of Finland, and Swedifh. Lapland, formerly worthipped an idol, whom they called Iumalac ; and fince the reign of Guftavus Adolphus, to whom they are indebted for the appellation of Lutherans, they call Jefus Chrift the fon of Iumalac. The Ruffian Laplanders are at prefent faid to be of the Greek church; but thofe who wander about the mountains of the North Cape, are fatisfied with adoring one God under certain grofs forms, as has been the ancient cultom of all the nations called Nomades, or wandering nations.

This fort of people, who are inconfiderable in numbers, have but very few ideas, and fo far are happy in not baving more, which would only ocC 3 .

## 32 THEHISTORY

cafion them to have new wants which they could not fatisfy: at prefent they live confented, and free from difeafes, notwithflanding the exceffive rigour of their climate; they drink nothing but water, and arrive to a great age. The cuftom imputed to them of defiring ftrangers to lie with their wives and daughters, which they efteem as an honour done to them, probably comes from a notion of the fuperiority of ftrangers, and a defire of amending, by their means, the defects of their own race. This was a practice eftablifhed amonglt the virtuous Lacedaentonians. A hufband would beg as a favour, of a comely young man, to give him bandfome children, whom he might adopt. Jealoury, and the laws, hinder the reft of mankind from giving their wives up to the embraces of another; but the Laplanders have few or no laws, and are, in all probability, not given to jealoufy.

## MOSCOW.

Ascending the river Dwina from North to South, we proceed up the country till we come to Mofcow, the capital of the empire. This city was long the centre of the Ruflian dominions, before they were extended on the fide of China and Perfia.

Moscow, lying in fifty-five degrees and an half north latitude, in a warmer climate, and more fertile foil than Peterfburg, is fituated in the midft of a large and delightful plain on the river Mofk-

## OF RUSSIA.

wa, and two leffer rivers, which are fwallowed up in the Occa, and afterwards run into the Wolga. This city, in the thirteenth century, confited only of fmall huts, peopled by a let of miferable wretches, oppreffed by the defcendants of Gengis-Khan.

The Kremlin, which was the refidence of the great dukes, was not built till the fourteenth century; of fo little antiquity are the cities in this part of the world. This palace was conftructed by Italian architects, as were feveral churches in the Gothic tafte, which then prevailed throughout all Europe. There are two built by the famous Ariforle of Bologna, who flourifhed in the fifteenth century; but the houfes of the common people were no better than wooden huts.

THE firf writer who gives us any information of Mofcow, was Olearius; who, in 1633 , went thither as the companion of an embafly from the duke of Holftein. And was prodigioully ftruck with wonder at the immenfe extent of the city of Mofcow, with its five inclofures, particularly the magnificent one belonging to the czars, and with the Afratic fplendor which then reigned at that court. There was nothing equal to it in Germany at that time, nor any city near fo extenfive or well peopled.

On the contrary, the Earl of Carliffe, who was Ambaffador from Charies II. to the czar Alexis, in 1603 , complains in bis account, that he could not meet with any one comfort of life in Mofcow; no inns on the road, nor refrefhments of any kind. One judged as a German, the other as an Englith.

## 34 THEHISTORY

man, and both by comparifon. The Englifhman was fhocked to obferve that moft of the Boyars, or Mufcovite noblemen, flept upon boards or benches, with only the fkins of animals under them ; but this was the ancient practice of all nations. Their houfes were almoft all built of wood, had fcarcely any furniture; few or none of their tables were covered with linen ; there the fireets not paved; nothing agreeable; nothing convenient; very few artificers, and thefe few extremely rude, and employed only in works of abfolute neceffity. Thefe people might have paffed for Spartans, had they been fober.

But on days of ceremony, the court difplays all the fplendour of a Perfian monarch. The earl fays, he could fee nothing but gold and jewels on the robes of the czar and his courtiers. Thefe drefles were not manufactured in the country; and yet it is evident, that the court might have been the means of making the people induftrious long before that time. In the reign of the czar Boris $\mathrm{Go}^{-}$ donow, the largeft bell in Europe was caft at Mofcow; and in the patriarchal church, there were feveral ornaments of filver, of curious workmanfhip; but thefe works, which were made under the direction of Germans and Italians, were only tranfient efforts. It is daily induftry, and the conflant practice of a great number of arts, that makes a flourifhing nation. Poland, and the neighbouring nations, were at that time very little fuperior to the Ruffians. The handicraft trades had not arrived to greater perfection in the north of Germany, nor
were the fine arts much better known than in the middle of the feventeenth century.

Though the city of Mofcow, at that time, had neither the magnificence nor arts of our great cities in Europe; yet its circumference of twenty miles; the part called the Chinefe town, where all the curiofities of China are exhibited; the fpacious quarter of the Kremlin, where ftood the palace of the czars; the gilded domes, the lofty and furprifing towers; and, in fine, the prodigious number of its inhabitants, amounting to near five hundred thoufand: all this makes Mofcow one of the moft confiderable cities in the world.

Theodore, or Fodor, the eldeft brother to Peter the Great, began to embellifh Mofcow. He caufed feveral large houfes to be built of ftone, though without any regular architecture. He encouraged the principal nobility of his court to build, advancing them money, and furnifhing them with materials. He was the firft who encouraged the breed of fine horfes, and made feveral other fine and ufeful embellifhments. Peter, who was attentive to every improvement, took care not to neglect Mofcow at the time he was building Peterfburg; for he caufed it to be paved, adorned it with noble buildings, and enriched it with manufactures; and within thefe few years, Mr. de Showalow, high Chamberlain to the emprefs Elizabeth, daughter to Peter the Great, has founded an univerfity in this city. This is the fame perfon who furnifhed me with the materials, from which I have compiled the prefent hiftory, and who was himfelf much more
capable to have wrote it, even in the French lan: guage, had not his great modefty made him give up the tafk to me as will evidently appear from his own letters on this fubject, which I have depofited in the public library of Geneva.

## SMOLENSKO.

Westward of the Duchy of Mofoow, is that of Smolenfko, a part of the ancient Sarmatia Europea. The duchies of Mofcow and Smolenfko compofed what is properly called White Ruffia. Smolenfko, which at firf belonged to the great dukes of Ruffia, was conquered by the great duke of Lithuania, in the beginning of the fifteenth century, and was recovered one hundred years afterwards by its former kings. Sigifmund HII king of Poland, took poffeffion of it in 10 II . The czar Alexis, father to Feeer I. retook it again in 10 c 5 . fince which time it has always made a part of the Ruffian empire. The eulogium of Peter the Great, pronounced in the academy of fciences at Paris, takes notice, that before this time the Ruffians had made no conquefts either to the Weft or South ; but this is certainly a miftake.

Of the government of NOvOGOROD and Kiow, or the Ukraine.

Between Peterfburg and Smolenko, lies the proviace of Novogorod; a country in which the

## OFRーU゙SSIA.

ancient Slavi, or Sclavonians, made their firft fettlements. But from whence came thefe Slavi, whofe language has fpread over all the north eaft part of Europe? Sla fignifies a chief, and Slave one belonging to a chief. All that we know concerning thofe ancient Slavi, is, that they were a race of conquerors; that they built the city of Navogorod the Great, fituated on a navigable river; that this city was for a long time in poffeflion of a flourifhing trade, and was a potent ally of the Hanfe towns. The czar, John Bafilowitz, made a conqueft of it in 1467 , and carried away all its riches, which contributed to the magnificence of the court of Mofoow, which till that time was almolt unknown.

To the fouth of the province of Smolenko, we meet with the province of Kiow, otherwife called the Leffer Ruffia, Ked Ruffia, or the Ukraine, through which runs the Dneiper, called by the Greeks the Borifthenes. The difference of thefe two words, the one harfh to pronounce, and the other melodious, fhew us, among an hundred other proofs, the rudenefs of all the ancient people of the north, in comparifon of the graces of the Greek language. Kiow, the capital city, formerly Kifow, was founded by the emperors of Conftantinople, who made it a colony: here are ftill feveral Greek inicriptions, of upwards of one thouland two hundred years ftanding, very legible. This is the only city of any antiquity in thefe countries, wherein the inhabitants have lived to long together without building, walls. It was here that the great
dukes of Ruffia held their refidence in the eleventh century, before the Tartars fubdued Ruffia.

The inhabitants of the Ukraine, called Coffacks, are a mixture of the ancient Roxolanians, Sarmatians and Tartars. Rome and Conftantinople, though fo long the miftreffes of other nations, are not to be compared in fertility with the Ukraine. Nature has there exerted her utmoft efforts for the fervice of the inhabitants; but they have not im. proved thofe efforts by induftry, living only upon the fpontaneous productions of that fruitful uncultivated foil, and the practice of robbery. Though fond to excefs of that moft valuable of all bleffings, liberty; yet they were always in flavery, either to the Poles or the Turks, till the year 1654 , when they fubmitted themfelves to the arms of Ruffia, but with fome particular privileges. At length they were entirely fabdued by Peter the Great.

Other nations are divided into cities and towns; this into ten regiments. At the head of which is a chief, who is ufed to be elected by the majority of votes, and is called by the name of Hetman or Itman. This captain of the nation has not the fupreme power. At prefent the Itman is a perfon nominated by the fovereign, from among the chief of the nobility; and is, in fact, no more than the governor of the province, like governors of the Pays d'Etats in France, that have retained fome privileges.

Formerly the inhabitants of this country were all either Pagans or Mahometans; but when they entered into the fervice of Poland, they were baptifed
OFRUSSIA.
tifed Chriftians of the Roman communion; and now, as they are in the fervice of Ruffia, they practife the rites of the Greek church.

AMONGST thefe are comprifed the $\mathbf{Z}$ poravian Coffacks, who are much the fame as our Buccaneers, or Freebouters, defperate fellows, living upon rapine. They are ditinguifhed from all other people, by never admitting women to live among them; as the Amazons are faid never to have admitted any man. The women, whom they ufe for propagation, dwell upon other iflinds on the river; they have no marriages amongtt them, nor any domeftic oconomy; they inrol the male children in their army, and leave the girls to the care of their mothers. Often a brother has children by his fifter, and a father by his daughter. I hey know no other laws than cuftoms introduced by neceffity: however, they make ufe of fome prayers from the Greek ritual. Fort St. Elizabeth has been lately built on the Borifthenes, to keep them in fubjection. They ferve as irregulars in the Ruflian armies, and woe be to thofe who fall into their hands.

Of the government of BELGOROD, WORONITZ, and NISCHGOROD.

To the north-eaft of the province of Kiow, between the Borifthenes and the Tanais, or the Don, is the government of Belgorod, which is as large as that of Kiow. This is one of the moft fertile
provinces of Ruffia, and fusnifites Poland with a prodigious number of thofe large cattle, known by the name of the Ukraine oxen. Thefe two pro. vinces are protected from the incurfions of the fmall Tartar tribes, by lines extending from the Borifthenes to the Tanais, and well furnifhed with forts and redoubts.

Ascending northward we crofs the Tanais, and come into the government of Worownitz or Veronife, which extends to the banks of the Palus Mæotis. In the neighbourhood of the capital of Veronife, which is called by the Ruffians, Woronefteh, at the mouth of the river of the fame name, which falls into the Tanais, Peter the Great built his firft fleet; an undertaking which at that time was aftonifhing to the inbabitants of thefe vaft dominions. From thence we come to the government of Nifchgorod, abounding with grain, and watered by the river Wolga.

## ASTRACAN.

FROM the latter province we proceed fouthward to the kingdom of Aftracan. This country extends from forty three and a half degrees north latitude, in a moft delightful climate, to near filty, including as many degrees of longitude, as of latituide. It is bounded on one fide by the Calpian fea, and on the other by the mountains of Circaffia, ftretching beyond the Cafpian, along mount Caucafus. It is watered by the great river Wolga,
the Jaic, and feveral other leffer ftreams, between which, according to Mr. Perry, the Englifh engineer, canals might be cut that would ferve as refervoirs to receive the overflowing of the waters; and by that means anfwer the fame purpofes as the canals of the Nile, and greatly improve the fertility of the foil; but to the right and left of the Wolga and Jaic, this fine country was inhabited, or rather infefted, by Cartars, who never improved the land, but have always lived as ftrangers and vagabonds in this part of the world.

Perry the engineer, who was employed by Peter the Great in thefe parts, found thefe defarts covered with pafture, pulfe, cherry and almond trees, and large flocks of wild fheep, who fed in thefe defarts, and whofe flefh was molt excellent. The inhabitants of thele countries muft be fubdued and civilized, in order to fecond the efforts of nature, which has been forced in the climate of Peterfburg.

THE kingdom of Aftracan is a part of the ancient Capfhak, conquered by Gengis-Khan, and afterwards by Camerlane, whofe dominions reached as far as Mofcow. The czar John Bafilides, grandfon of John Bafilowitz, and the greateft conqueror of all the Ruffian princes, delivered this country from the Tartarian yoke, in the fixteenth century, and added the kingdom of Aftracan to his other conquelts in 1554 .

ASTRACAN is the boundary of Afia and Europe, and from its fituation is convenient to carry on a trade with both, as merchandifes may be conveyed from the Calpian fea, up to this town, by means of the
the Wolga. This was one of the grand fchemes of Pete the Great, and has been partly carried into execution. A whole fuburb of $A$ ftracan is inhabited by Indians.
OREMBOUR G.
'To the fouth-eaft of the kingdom of Aftracan, is a fmall country newly planted, called Orembourg. The town of this name was built in the year 1734, on the banks of the river Jaic. This province is covered with the branches of mount Caucafus. The paffes in thefe mountains, and of the rivers that run down from them, are defended by forts raifed at equal diftances. In this country, which was formerly uninhabited, the Perfans come at prefent to hide, from robbers fuch of their effects as they have faved from the fury of the civil wars. Sothat the city of Orembourg is become the afylum of the Perfians and their riches, and is grown confiderable by their calamities. The natives of Great Bukari come hither to trade, fo that it is become the flaple of $A$ fia.

Of the government of CASAN, and of Great Permia.

BEyOND the Wolga and Jaic, towards the north, lies the kingdom of Cafan, which, like that of Afracan, fell by partition to one of the fons of Gengis.

Gengis-Khan, and afterwards to a fon of Tamerlane, and was at length conquered by John Bafilides. It is ftill inhabited by a number of Mahometan Tartars. This vaft country extends as far as Siberia: it is evident it was formerly very flourifhing and rich, and ftill preferves fome part of its priftine opulence. A province of this kingdom, called Great Permia, and fince Solikam, was the faple of the merchandifes of Perfia, and the furs of Tartary. There has been found in Permia a large quantity of the coin of the firft Caliphs, and fome golden idols, belonging to the Tartars *; but thefe monuments of ancient riches were found in the midft of barren defarts and extreme poverty, where there were not the lealt traces of any traffick : revolutions of this kind may eafily happen in a barren country, feeing they fo often happen in the moft fruitful kingdoms.

THE famous Swedifh prifoner Strahlemberg, who made fo good an ufe of his misfortunes, and who examined thofe vaft countries with fo much attention, was the firft who gave an air of probability to a fact, which before had been always deemed incredible; namely, concerning the ancient commerce of thefe provinces. Pliny and Pomponius Mela relate, that, in the reign of Auguftus, a king of Sueivi made a prefent to Metellus Celer of fome Indians who had been caft by a ftorm on the coafts bordecing on the Elbe. But how could inhabitants of India navigate the Germanic feas? This adventure

[^1]was deemed fabulous by the difcovery of the Cape of Good Hope. But formerly it was no more extraordinary to fee an Indian trading to the northweft of his country, than to fee a Roman go from India by the way of Arabia. The Indians went to Perfia, and thence embarked on the fea of Hyrcania, and afcending the Rha, now the Wolga, got to the Great Permia through the river Kama; from whence they might imbark again on the Black fea, or the Baltic. They have, in all times, been enter prifing men. The Tyrians undertook moft furprifing voyages.

If after furveying all thefe vaft provinces, we direct our eye towards the eaft, we fhall find the limits of Europe and Afia again confounded. A new name fhould be given to this confiderable part of the globe. The ancients divided their known world into Europe, A fia, and Africa; but they had not feen the tenth part of it : hence it happens, that when we pafs the Palus Mæotis, we no longer know where Europe ends, or A fia begins; all that traCl of country lying beyond mount Taurus was diftinguifhed by the general appellation of Scythia, and afterwards by that of Cartary. It might not be improper, perhaps, to give the name of Terix Arcticæ, or Northern Lands, to that part of the globe extending from the Baltic fea to the confines of China; as that of Ferra Aultralis, or Southern Lands, are to that equally extenfive part of the world, fituated under the Antarctic Pole, and which ferves to counterpoife the globe.

## OFRUSSIA.

Of the government of Siberia, of the Samojedes, the Ostiaks, Kamishatka, dec.

Siberia, with the territories beyond it, extends from the frontiers of the provinces of Archangel, Refan, and Aftracan, eaftward as far as the fea of Japan. It joins the fouthern parts of Ruflia by mount Caucalus; from thence, to the country of Kamthatka, is about one thoufand two hundred computed French leagues; and from fouthern Tartary, which ferves as its boundary to the Fiozen fea, about four hundred, which is the leaft breadth of the Ruffian empire. This country produces the richeft furs; to which its difcovery was owing in the year 1563.

In the fixteenth century, in the reign of the czar John Bafilides, and not in that of Foedor Johannowitz, a private perfon in the neighbourhood of Archangel, named Anika, one tolerably rich for his condition of life and country, took notice, that men of an extraordinary figure, and dreffed in a manner unknown to that country, and who fooke a language underitood by no body but themfelves, came every year down a river which falls into the Dwina $t$, and brought martens and black foxes, which they exchanged for nails and pieces of glafs; juit as the firft favages of America ufed to truck their gold with the Spaniards: he ordered them to be followed by his fons and fervants, as far as their

[^2]
## 46 THE HISTORY

awn country. Thefe were the Samojedes, a people who feem to refemble the Laplanders, but are of a different race. 'They are, like that nation, unacquainted with the ufe of bread; and like them, they yoke rein deer to draw their fledges. They live in caverns and huts amidft the fnow *; but nature in other refpects, has made a vifible difference between thefe fort of men and the Laplanders. Their upper jaw projects forward, fo as to be on a level with their nofe, and their ears are higher. Both the men and the women bave no hair but on their heads; and their nipple is as black as ebony. The Lap. landers are diftinguifhed by no fuch marks. By memoirs fent me-from thefe unknown countries, I have been informed, that the author of the natural hiftory of the king's garden, is miftaken, where, in fpeaking of many curiofities in human nature, he confounds the Lapland race with that of the Samojedes. There are many more different kinds of men than is commonly thought. The Samojedes, and the Hottentots, feem to be the two extremes of our continent; and if we obferve the black nipples of the Samojedian women, and the apron with which nature has furnifhed the Hottentot women, and which hangs half way down their thighs, we fhall have fome idea of the great variety of our a. nimal fecies : a variety unknown to thofe inhabiting great cities, who are generally ftrangers to almolt every thing which is not immediately within their view.

[^3]
## OFRUSSIA.

The Samojedes are as fingular in their moral as in their natural diftinctions; they pay no worfhip to the fupreme being; they border upon Manicheifm, or rather upon the religion of the ancient Magi in this article, that they acknowledge a good and an evil principle. The horrible climate they inhabit may in fome meafure excufe this belief, which is fo natural to thofe who are ignorant and miferable.

Murder or theft is never heard of amonght them; being in a manner void of pafions, they are ftrangers to injultice; there is no term in their language to denote vice and virtue; their extreme fimplicity has not yet permitted them to form abfract ideas ; they are wholly guided by fenfation; and this is perhaps an inconteftible proof that men are naturally fond of jullice, when not blinded by inordinate paffions.

SOME of thefe favages were prevailed on to come to Mofoow, where many things they faw fruck them with admiration. They looked upon the emperor as their God, and voluntarily engaged to pay for themfelves and each countryman two martens or fables every year. Colonies were foon fixed beyond the Oby and the Irtis $t$, and fome forts built. In the year 159 ; a Coffack officer was fent into this country, who conquered it for the Czar with only a few troops and fome artillery, as Cortiz did Mexico; but he only made a conquelt of bairen defarts.

+ In the Ruffian lagguage Irtich.

In running up the oby to the junction of the river Irtis with the Tobol, they found a little fettlement, which is now the town of "ubol § and capital of Siberia, a very confiderable place. Who could imagine that this country was for a long time the abode of thofe very Huns, who under Attila carried their depredations as far as the gates of Rome, and that thefe Huns came from the north of China ? The Ufbeck Tartars fucceeded the Huns, and the Ruffians the Urbecks. The poffeflion of there favage lands has been difputed with as much favage fury, as that of the moft fertile provinces. Siberia was formerly more populous than it is at prefent, efpecially towards the fouthern parts; if we may judge from the rivers and fepulchral mo. numents.

All this part of the world, from the fixtieth degree of latitude, or thereabouts, and as $f a r$ as thofe frozen mountains which border on the north feas, is entirely different from the regions of the temperate zolle; the earth produces neither the fame plants, nor the fame animals, nor are there the fame fort of fifh:s in their lakes and rivers.

BeLow the country of the Samojedes lies that of the Oftiaks, along the river Oby. Thefe people have no refemblance or connection in any refpect with the samojedes, unlefs that like them and all the firft race of men, they are hunters, fifbermen, and thepherds; fome of them have no religion, not being tormed into any fociety, and the others

[^4]
## OFRUSSIA.

who live together in herds or clans, have a kind of worfhip, and pray to the principal object of their wants ; they worfhip the fkin of a freep, becaule this creature is of all others the moft ufeful to them; juft as the Egyptian hufbandmen made choice of an ox, as an emblem of the Deily who created that creature for the ufe of man.

The Oftiaks have likewife other idols, whofe osigin and worthip are as little worth our notice as their wothhippers. There were fome converts to Chrifianity made amongft them in the year 1712 ; but thefe, like the loweft of our peafants, are Chriftians without knowing what they profefs. Several writers pretend that thele people were natives of Great Permia, but as Great Permia is in a manner a defart, we cannot well imagine that thofe people fhould fettle at fo great a diftance, and in fo wretched a country. This matter is not worth clearing up; as any nation, which has not cultivated the polite arts, deferves to remain in obfcurity.

In the country of the Olliak in particular, and among ft their neighbours the Burates and Jukutians, they often difcover a kind of ivory under ground, the nature of which is yet unknown. Some take it to be a fort of foffit, and others the tooch of a ipecies of elephants, the breed of which have been deftroyed: but where is the country that does not afford fome natural productions, which at once aftonith and confound philofophy?

SEFERAL mountains in this country abound with the amianthes or albeflos, a kind of incombuftible
bunlible flax, of which a fort of linen cloth and paper is fometimes made.

To the fouth of the Oftiaks are the Burates, an other people, who have not yet embraced Chrifianity. Eaftward there are feveral hords, whom the Ruffians have not yet entirely fubdued.

None of thefe people have the leaft knowledge of the kalendar. They reckongtheir time by finows, and not by the apparent motion of the fun: as it fnows regularly, and for a long time every winter, they fay, 'I am fo many fnows old,' juft as we fay, I am fo many years old.

And here I mult mention an extraordinary fact related by the Swedifh officer Strahlemberg, who was taken prifoner in the battle of Pultowa, and lived fifteen years in Siberia, and made a furvey of that country. He fays that there are fill fome remains of an ancient people, whofe fkin is fpotted or variegated with different colours, and that he him. felf had feen fome of them; and the fact has been confirmed to me by Ruffians born at Toboliky. The variety of the human feccies feems to be greatly diminifhed, as we find very few of thefe extraordinary people, and they have probably been exterminated by fome other race: for inftance, there are rery few Albinos, or White Moors ; one of them was prefented to the academy of fiences at Paris, which I faw It is the fame with refpect to feveral other fpecies of animals which are fearce.

As to the Borandians, of whom mention is made fo frequently in the learned hiftory of the king's
OFRUSSIA.
garden, my memoirs acquaint me, that this race of people is entirely unknown to the Ruffians.

Ale the fouthern part of thefe countries is peopled by numerous bodies of Partars. The ancient Turks came from this part of Partary to conquer thefe extenfive countries, of which they are at prefent in poffeflion. The Calmucks and Moguls are - the very Scythians who, under Madies, became mafters of Upper Afa, and conquered Cyaxares king of the Medes. They are the men, whom Gengis Khan and his fons led afterwards as far as Germany, and was termed the Mogul empire under Tamerlane. Thefe people afford a lively picture of the viciffitudes which have happened to all nations; fome of their hords, fo far from being formidable now, are become tributaries to Ruffia.

This is the fituation of every particular nation of Calmucks, dwelling between Siberia, and the Cafpian fea, where, in the year 172 , was difcovered a fubterraneous houfe of ftone, with urns, lamps, ear-rings, an equeltrian ftatue of an oriental prince, with a diadem on his head, two women feated on thrones, and a roll of manuferipts, which were fent by Feter the Great to the acadeny of infcriptions at Paris, and proved to be written in the Thibet language: all thefe plainly fhew, that the liberal arts formerly refided in this now barbarous country, and are lafting evidences of the truth of what Peter the Great was wont feveral times to fay, viz. that the arts bad made the tour of the univerfe.

The laft province is Kamtfiatka, the moft eaft-
Vol. 1
D
e!n
ern part of the continent. The inhabitants were abfolutely void of all religion when this country was firt difcovered. The north part of this country likewife abounds with fine furs, with which the inhabitants clothe themfelves in winter, though they go naked all the fummer featon The firt difcoverers were furprifed to find in the fouthern parts men with long beards, while in the northern parts, from the country of the Samojedes, as far as the mouth of the river Amur, they have no more beards than the Americans. Thus in the empire of Ruffia, there is a greater number of different fpecies, more oddities, and a greater diverfity of manners, and variety of cultoms, than in any country of the world.

THE firl difcovery of this province was made by a Coffack officer, who went by land from Siberia to Kamthatka in 1701, by order of Peter the Great, who, notwithftanding his misfortune at Narva, fill continued to extend his concein for the moft extreme parts of his dominions. Aftere warls, in 1726 , fometime before his death, in the midft of his great exploits, he fent captain Bering, a Dane, with exprefs orders to find out, if poffible, a paffage by the fea o: Kantfhatks, to the coalt of A merica. Bering did not fucceed in his firft attempt; but the emprefs anne fent him out again in 733 . M. spengenbe g , captain of a fhip, his affociate in this voyage, fet out the firft from Kamt. flaika, but could not put to fea till the year 1739 , fo much time was taken up in getting to the port where they were to imbaik, in building and fitting

## OFRUSSIA.

eut the Mips, and providing the neceffaries. Spengenberg failed as far as the north of Japan, through a flreight, formed by a long chain of iftands, and returaed without having difcovered more than the paffage.

IN 17 , Bering cruifed all over this fea, in company with De l'Ifle de la Croyere, the aft onomer, of the fame family of De L'Ifle, which has produced fuch excellent geographers : another captain likewife failed upon the fame difcovery. They both reached the coaft of America, to the northward of California. Thus the north-eaft paffage, fo long lought after, was at length difcovered ; but there were no provifions to be met with in thefe barren coafts. Their frefh water was fpent, and many of the ciew perifhed with the fcurvy. They faw the northern bank of California for above an hundred miles, and faw fome leathern canoes, with juft fuch a fort of people in them as the Canadians. All their endeavours, however, proved fruitlefs. Bering ended his life in an ifland, to which he gave his name. The other captain, happening to be clofer in with the Californian coaft, fent ten of his people on fhore, who never returned. The captain, aiter waiting for them in vain, found himfelf obliged to return to Kamthatka, and De L'lle died as he was going on thore. Such are the misfortunes that have attended every new attempt upon the northein feas. But what advantages may yet arife from théfe powerful and dangerous difcoveries, time alone muft reveal.

We have now defcribed all the different pro*
vinces

## 54

 THEHISTORYvinces that compofe the Ruffian dominions, from Finland to the fea of Japan. The largeft parts of this empire have been united at different times, as lias been the cafe in all other kingdoms in the world. The Scythians, Huns, Maffagetes, Slavians, Cimbrians, Getes, and Sarmatians, are now fubjeds of the Czar. The Ruffians, properly fo called, are the ancient Roxolani or Slavi.

Upon reflection, we fhall find that mof flates were formed after this manner. The French are an afitmblage of Goths, of Danes, called Normans, of northern Germans, called Burgundians ; of Franks, Alemans, and fome Romans mixed with the ancient Celtre. In Rome and Italy there are many families defcended from the people of the north, but none fprung from the ancient Romans. The fovereign pontiff is frequently fprung from a Lombard, a Goth, a Teuton, or a Cimbrian. The Spaniards are a race of A rabs, Carthaginians, Jews, Tyrians, Vifignths, and Vandals, incorporated with the ancient inthabitants of the country. When nations are thus intermised, it is a long time before they are civilized, or even before their language is formed. Some indeed receive thefe improvements fooner, others later. Polity and the liberal arts are fo difficult to eftablifh, and the new raifed $f a-$ brick fo often deftroyed by revolutions, that we may wonder all other nations are not as barbarous as the Tartars.


## C H A P. I.

Continuation of the defcription of Ruffia, population, finances, armies, cuftoms, religion. State of Ruffia before Peter the Great.

rinHE more a country is civilized the better is it peopled. Lhus China and India are the moft populous of all other empines, becaufe that after the multitude of revolutions, which have changed the face of the earth, thefe two nations made the earlieft eftabliflaments in fociety. Their government having fubfifted upwards of four thoufand years, fuppofes, as we have already obferved, many eflays and efforts in preceding ages. The Ruffians came very late; and as the arts baving been introduced amongit them in their full perfection, it has happened, that they made more progrefs. in fifty years, than any other nation has made in five hundred. The country is far from being populous, in proportion to its extent ; but fuch as it is, it has as great a number of inbabitants as any other fate in Chriftendom. I might affert from the capitation lifts, and the regifter of merchants, arti* ficers, and male peafarts, that Ruffia, at prefent, contains at leaft twency four millions of inhabitants :

$$
\text { D. } 3
$$

of

## 56 THE HISTORY

of thefe twenty four millions, the moff part are villains or bondmen, as in Poland, feveral provinces of Germany, and formeriy throughout all Europe. The eflate of a gentleman in Ruffia and Poland is computed, not by his increafe in money, but by the number of his flaves.

The following is a lin taken in 1747 , of all the males who paid the capitation or poll-tax.

Merchants or tradefmen - . 198000
Workmen - . . . 16500
Peafants incorporated with the merchants
and workmen -
Peafants called Odon fkis, who contribute to maintain the militia - - 430220
Others who did not contribute thereto 20080
Workmen of different trades, whofe parents are unknown . . . 1000
Others who are not incorporated in the clafs of workmen . - 4700
Peafants immediately dependent on the crown, about

555000
Perfons employed in the mines belonging to the crown, partly Chriftians, partly Mahometans and Pagans - 64000 Other perfons of the crown, who work in the mines, and private manufactures $\quad 24200$ New converts to the Greek church $\quad 57000$ Tartars and Oftiaks (peafants) - 241000 Mourfes, Tartars, Morduats, and others, whether Pagans or Chriftians, employed by the admiralty . . $7^{800}$ Tartars
OF RUSSIA.

Tartars fubject to contribution, called Tepteris, Bobilitz, \&cc. - - 28,00
Bondmen to feveral merchants, and other privileged people, who, without poffeffing any lands, are allowed to have flaves - . - . 9100
Peafants defigned for the maintenance of the crown

4, 8000
Peafants on the lands belonging to her majefty, independently of the rights of the crown

60500
Peafants on the lands confifcated to the crown - - - 136000
Bondmen belonging to gentlemen
355000
Bondmen belonging to the affembly of the clergy, and who defray their expences 37500
Bondmen belonging to bifhops
116400
Bondmen belonging to convents, whofe numbers were reduced by Peter the
Great - - - 721500

Bondmen belonging to the cathedral and parifh churches
Peafants employed as labourers in the docks of the admiralty, or in other public woiks, about

4000
Labourers in the mints, and in private manufactures

16000
Peafants on the lands affigned to the principal manufacayes
Labourers in the mines belonging to the
crown - - . 3000

Baftards brought up by the priefts - $4^{\circ}$ Sectaries called Rafkolniky - - 2200

Here is in a round number, fix millions fix hundred forty-fix thoufand three hundred and ninety male perfons, who pay the poll-tax. In this number are included boys and old men, bus girls and women are not reckoned, nor boys born between the making of one regitter of the lands and another. Now, if we only triple the number of heads, fubject to be taxed, including women and girls, we thall find near twenty millions of fouls.

To this number we may add the military lift, which amounts to three hundred and fifty thoufand men. Befides, neither the nobility nor clergy, who are computed at two hundred thoufand, are reco koned in this capitation.

Foreigners of whatever country or profeffion, are likewife exempt; as alfo the inhabitants of the conquered countries, namely, Livonia, Eftonia, Ingria, Carelia, and a part of Finland, the Ukraine, and the Don Coflacks, the Calmucks, and other Tartars, Samojedes, the Laplanders, the Oftiacks, and all the idolatrous people of Siberia, a country larger than China, are not reckoned in the lift.

By this calculation, it is impoffible that the total of the inhabitants of Ruffia fhould amount to lefs than twenty-four millions. At this computation, there are eight perfons to every fquare mile. The Englifh embaffador mentioned before,

## OFRUSSIA.

allows only five; but he certainly was not furnified with fuch faithful memoirs, as thofe with which I have been favoured.

Russia therefore is exactly five times lefs populous than Spain, but contains four times the number of inhabitants: it is near as populous as France or Germany; but if we confider its prodigious extent, the number of fouls is thirty times lefs.

In regard to this enumeration there is one im. portant remark to be made, namely, that out of fix millions, fix hundred and forty thoufand people liable to the poll-tax, there are nine hundred thoufand that belong to the clergy of Ruffia, without reckoning the clergy of the conquered countries, of the Ukraine, and Siberia.

Therefore, out of feven perfons liable to the poll tax, the clergy have one ; but neverthelefs they are far from poffefling the feventh part of the whole revenues of the ftate, as is the cafe in many other kingdoms, where they have at lealt a feventh of all eftates; for their peafants pay a capitation to the fovereign; and the other taxts of the crown of RulGa, in which the clergy have no fhare, are very confiderable.

This valuation is very different from that of all other writers who have made mention of Ruflia; fo that foreign minitlers who have tranfmitted memoirs of this fate to their courts have been greatly miftaken. The archives of the empire are the only things to be confidered.

It is very probable, that Ruffia has been much more populous than it is at prefent; before the D 5
fmall-
fmall-pox that came from A rabia, and the great pox came from America, had ravaged thefe climates, where they have now taken root Thefe two fcourges have depopulated the world more than all its wars, the one owing to Mahomet, and the other to Chriftopher Columbus. The plague, originally of Africa, feldom approaches the countries of the north. Befides, the people of the north, from Sarma. tia, to the Tartars who dwell beyond the great wall, having overfpread the world by their irruptions, this ancient nurfery of men muft have been firangely diminifhed.

In this vaft extent of country, there are faid to be about feven thoufand four hundred monks, and five thoufand fix hundred nuns, not withftanding the care taken by Peter the Great to reduce their numbers; a care worthy the legiflator of an empire, where the human race principally fail. Thefe thirteen thoufand perfons, thus cloiftered and loft to the fate, have (as the reader may have remarked) feven hundred and twenty thoufand bondmen to till their lands, which is evidently too great a number. There cannot be a ftronger proof of the difficulty of eradicating abufes of a long ftanding.

IFIMD, by a fate of the revenues of the empire in 172 , that reckoning the tribute paid by the Tartars, with all taxes and daties in money, the fum total amounted to thirteen millions of rubles, which make fixty five millions of French livres, exclufive of tributes in kind. This moderate fum was at that time fufficient to maintain three hundired and thirty nine thoufand five hundred men,
as well fea as land forces: bat both the revenues of the crown and the number of troops are greatly augmented fince that time.

The cultome, diets, and manners of the Ruffians, ever bore a greater refemblance to thofe of A fia than to thofe of Europe: fuch was the old cuftom of receiving tribute in kind, of defraying the expences of ambaffadors on their journeys, and during their refidence in the country, and of never appearing at church, or before the throne with a fword; an oriental cuftom, directly the reverfe of that ridiculous and barbarous one amongit us, of addreffing ourfelves to God, to our king, to our friends, and to our women, with an offenfive weapon, which hangs down to the bottom of the leg. The long robe worn on public days had a more noble air than the fhort habits of the weftern nations of Europe A tunic lined and turned up with fur, with a long fcimar, adorned with jewels for fettival days ; and thofe high turbans, which add to the tlature, were much more flriking to the eye than our perukes and clofe coats, and more fuitable to cold climates; but this ancient drefs of all nations feems not to be fo well contriveri for war, hor fo convenient for working people. Moft of their other cuftoms were ruftic; but we muft not imagine, that their manners were as barbarous as reprefented by fome hiltorians. Albert Krants relates a fory of an Italian ambaffador, whom the Czar ordered to have his hat nailed on his head, for not pulling it off while he was making his fpeech to him. O-
thers attribute this adventure to a Tartar, and othero ogain to a French ambaffador.

Olearius pretends, that Czar Michael Theodorowitz banifhed the marquis Exideuil, ambal. fador from Henry IV. of France, into Siberia; but it is certain, that this monarch fent no ambaffador to Mofcow, and that there never was a marquis of Exideuil. In the fame manner do travellers fpeak abour the country of Borandia, a place that never exiffed, and of the trade they have carried on with the people of Nova Zembla, a country fcarcely inhabited, and the long converfations they have had with fome of the Samojedes, as if they underftood their language. Were the enormous compilations of voyages to be purged of every thing that is not true or ufeful in them, both the works and the public would be gainers by it.

The Ruffian government refembled that of the Turks, in refpect to the ftanding forces, or guards, called Strelitzes, who, like the Janizaries, fumetimes difpofed of the crown, and frequently difturbed the flate as much as they defended it. Their number was about forty thoufand. Thofe who were difperfed in the provinces, fubfifted by robbery and plunder ; thofe in Mofcow lived like citizens, fellowed trades, did no duty, and carried their infolence to the greateff excefs; in thort, there was no other way to preferve peace and good order in the kingdom, but by breaking them; a very neceffary, and at the fame time a very dangerous fep.

The public revenue does not exceed five miljions of rubles, or about twenty five millions of li-

## 1 OFRUSSIA. 63

vies. This was fufficient when Peter the Great came to the crown to maintain the ancient mediocrity, but was not a thied part of what was neceffary to raife them from an obfcureftate, and to render himfelf and people formidable in Europe: bus indeed many of their taxes were paid in kind, according to the furkifh cuftom, which is lefs burthenfone to the people than that of paying their tributes in money.

## Of the title of Czaa .

Wita regard to the title of Czar, it may poffibly come from the Tzars or Jechars of the kingdom of Cafan. When John, or Ivan Bafilides, compleated the conqueft of this kingdom in the fixteenth centu $y$, which had been begun by his grandfather, who afterwards loft it, he affumed this title, which his ferceffors have petained ever fince. Before John Bafilides, the fovereigns of Ruffia took the title of Welike Knez, i. e. Great prince, great lord, great chief, which the Chriftian nations a terwards rendereed by that of great duke. Czar Michael Theodoyowitz, when he received the Holftein embafly, took so himfelf the following titles: "Great knez, and "great ford, confervator of all the Ruffias, prince 46 of Wolodomer, Moícow, Novogorod, \&c. itzar of "Cafan, tzar of A ftracan, and tzar of Siberia." - Tzar was, therefore, a title belonging to thefe eaftem princes; and, therefore, it is more probable to have been dorived from the Thas of Perfia, than from the
the Roman Cæfars, whofe name never reached the ears of the Siberian Izars, on the banks of the Oby.

No title, however pompous, is of any confequence if thofe who bear it are not great and powerful of themfelves. The word emperor, which originally fignified no more than gexeral of the army, became the title of the fovereign of the Roman republic: it is now given to the fuprenie governor of all the Ruffias, more jufly than to any other porentate, if we confider the power and extent of his dominions.

## RELIGION.

The eftablifhed religion of this country has ever fince the eleventh century been that of the Greek church, fo called in oppofition to the Latin : though there were always a greater number of Mahometan and Pagan provinces, than of thofe inhabited by Chriltians. Siberia, as far as China, was in a flate of idolatry; and in fome of the provinces, they were utter ftrangers to all religion.

Perry, the engineer, and Baron Strahlemberg, who both refided fo many years in Ruffa, tell us, that they found more good faith and piobity among the Pagans, han the other inhabitants; not that Paganifm made them more virtuous; but their manner of living, which wat that of the primitive ages, freed them from all tumultuous paffions; and, in confequence, they were known for their integrity.

Christianity was not propaged in Ruffia, and the other countries of the north, till very late.

## OF RUSSIA.

It is faid that a princefs, named Olha, firft introduced it, about the end of the tenth century, as Clotilda, niece to an Arian prince, did among the Franks; the wife of Miceflaus, duke of Poland, among the Poles ; and the fifter of the emperor Henry II. among the Hungarians. Women are naturally eafily perfuaded by the minilters of religion, and as eafily perfuade the men.

It is furiher added, that this princefs Olha caufed herfelf to be baptifed at Conitantinople, by the name of Helena; and that as foon as the embraced Chriftianity, the emperor John Zimifces fell in love with her. It is moft likely that fhe was a widow; however, the refufed the emperor. The example of the princefs Olha, or Olga, as the is called, did not at firft make any great number of profelyres. Her fon $\ddagger$, who reigned a long time, was not of the fame way of thinking as his mother; but ber grandion Wolodimer, who was born of a concubine, having mounted the throne, fued for the alliance of Bafiles, emperor of Conftantinople, but could obtain it only on condition of receiving baptifm : and this event, which happened in the year nine hundred andeighty feven, is the epocha when the Greek church was eftablithed in Ruffia. Photius, the patriarch, fo famous for his immenfe learning, his difputes with the church of Rome, and for his misfortunes, fent a parfon to bapture Wolodimer, in order to add this part of the world to the patriarchal fee $\wp$.
$\ddagger$ His name was Sowallowflaw.
§ This anecdote is taken from a private $\mathrm{M}, \mathrm{S}$. intitled, "The $\mathrm{E}_{\mathrm{C}}$ WOLODIMER

WOLODIMER thus completed the work which his grandmother had begun. A Greek was made the firt Metropolitan, or Patriarch of Ruffia; and from this time, the Ruffians adopted an alphabet, partly derived from the Greek. This would have been of advantage to them, had they not Aill retained the principles of their language, which is the Sclavonian, in every thing, but a few terms relating to their liturgy and church government. One of the Greek patriarchs, named Jeremiah, having a fuit depending before the Divan, took a juurney to Mofcow io folicit the afliftance of that court; where, after fome time, he refigned his authority over the Ruffian churches, and confecrated the Archbifhop of Novogorod, named Job, patriarch, This was in one thouland five bundred and eighty eight, from which time the Ruffian church became 25 independent as the empire. The pattiarch of Puffia bas ever fince been confecrated by the Ruffian bifhops, and not by the patriarch of Conftantinople. He ranked in the Greek church next to the patriarch of Jerufalem; but he was in fact the only free and powerful patiarch, and confequently, the only real one. Thofe of Jerufalem, Conftantinople, Antioch, Alexandria, are mercenary chiefs of a church, enflaved by the Turks; and even the patiarchs of Jerualem and Antioch are no longer confidered as fuch, having no more credit or influence in Turkey, than the rabins of the Jewifh fynagogues fettled there.
clefiaftical Government of Ruffia," which is likewife depofited in the
publicliorary.

## OFRUSSIA.

Peter the Great was defcended in a direct line from a perfon who became patriarch of all the Ruffias. Thefe new prelates foon wanted to flare the fovereign authority with the Czars. They thought it not enough that their peince walked bare-headed once a year before the patriarch, leading his horfe by the bridle. Thefe external marks of refpect only ferved to encreafe their thirit for rule; a paffion which proved the fource of great troubles in Ruffia, as it has dane in other countries.

Nican, a perfon whom the monks look upon as a faint, and who was patriarch in the reign of Alexis, the father of Peter the Great, wanted to raife his dignity above that of ohe throne; for he not ondy affumed the privilege of fitting by the fide of the Czar in the fenate, but pretended that neither war nor peace could be made without his confent. His authority was fo great, that being fupported by his immenfe wealth, and by his intrigues with the cler gy and the people, be kept bis malter in a kind of fubjection. He had the boldnefs to excommunicate fome fenaters who oppofed this exceffive infotence; till at length, Alexis finding himfelf not powerful enough to depofe him by his own authority, was obliged to convene a fynod of all the bifhops. There the patriarch was accufed of having seceived money from the Poles; and being convict. led, was depofed and confined for the remainder of his days in a monaftery; after which the prelates chofe another patriarch.

From the firlt planting of Chriftianity in Ruflia, there have been feveral fects there, a's well as in o-
ther countries; for fects are as frequently the fruits of ignorance, as of pretended knowledge: but Rufira is the only Chriftian ftate of any confiderable ex. tent, in which religion has not excited civil wars, though it has felt fome occafional tumults.

The Rafkolnikys, who confift at prefent of about two thoufand males, and who are mentioned in the foregoing lift $\ddagger$, are the moft ancient fect of any in this country. It was eflablifhed in the tivelth century, by fome bigots, who had a fuperficial knowe ledge of the New leftament : they made ufe then, and ftill do, of the old pretence of all fectaries, that of following the letter, and acculed all other Chriftians of remiffnefs. They would not permit a prieft who had drank brandy, to confer baptiim; they afo firmed, in the words of our Saviour, that there is no precedency among the fath ul; and held, that a Chriftian might kill himfelf for the love of his Sao viour. According to them, it is a great fin to repeat the halleluja three times; and, therefore, repeat it only twice. The mark of the crofs is to be made only with three fingers. In other refpects, no fociety can be more regular or ftrict in its morals. They live like the quakers, and do not admit any other Chilitians into their affemblies, which is the reafon that thefe have accufed them of all the abominations of which the heathens accufed the primitive Gahieans, thete latter, the Gnoftics, and with which the Roman Catholics have charged the Proteftants. They have been frequently accuied

## OFRUSSIA.

of killing an infant, and drinking its blood; and of mixing together in their private ceremonies, without diftinction of kindred, age, or even of fex. They have been perfecuted at times, and then they have fhut themfelves up in their hamlets, fet fire to their houfes, and thrown themfelves into the flames. Peter took the only method of reclaiming them, which was by letting them live in peace.

But to conclude; in all this vaft empire, there are but twenty-eight epifcopal fees, and in Peter's time, there were but twenty-two. This fmall number was, perhaps, one of the caufes to which the Ruffian church owes its tranquillity. So very circumfcribed was the knowledge of the clergy, shat the Czar Theodore, brother to Peter the Great, was the firft who introduced the cultom of finging pfalms in churches.

Theodore and Peter, efpecially the latter, admitted indifferently into their councils and their armies, thofe of the Greek, and the Latin, the Lutheran, and the Calvinift communion, leaving every one at liberty to ferve God after his own confcience, provided he did his duty to the ftate. At that time, there was not one Latin church in this great empire of two thoufand leagues, till Peter eftablifhed fome new manufactures at Aftracan, when there were about fixty Roman Catholic families, under the direction of the capuchins; but the Jefuits endeavouring to eftablifh themfelves in his dominions, he drove them out by an ed ct, publifhed in the month of April 1718. He colerated the capuchins
puchins as an infignificant fet of monks, but conf. dered the Jefuits as dangerous politicians.

The Greek church has at once the honour and fatisfaction to fee its communion extended throughout an empire of two thoufand leagues in length, while that of Rome is not in poffeflion of half that tract in Europe. Thofe of the Greek commuhion have, at all times, been particularly attentive to maintain an equality between theirs and the Latin church; and always upon their guard againt the zeal of the fee of Rome, imputing it to ambition; becaufe, in fact, that church, whofe power is very much circumferibed in our hemifphere, and yet affumes the title of univerfal, has always endeavoured to act in fuch a manner as to deferve that title,

The Jews never made any fettlement in Ruffin, as they bave done in moft of the other ftates of Europe, from Conftantinople to Rome. The Ruf fians have carried on their trade by themfelves, or by the help of the nations fettled among them, Theirs is the only country of the Greek communion, where fynagogues are not intermixed with Chri: ftian temples.

Gonclufion of the fate of Russia before PETER the Great.

Russia is indebted folely to the Czar Peter for its great influence in the affairs of Europe; being of no confideration in any other reign, fince it embraced Chrittianity, Before this period, the Rul-

## OFRUSSIA.

fians made the fame figure on the Black Sea that the Normans did afterwards on the coafts of the ocean. In the reign of the emperor Heraclius, they fitted out an armament of forty thoufand fmall barks, appeared before Conftantinople, which they befieged, and impofed a tribute on the Greek emperors; but the grand knez Wolodimer, being wholly taken up with the care of eftablifhing Chriflianity in his dominions, and wearied out with inteftine broils in his own family, weakened his dominions by dividing them between his children. They almoft all fell a prey to the Tartars, who beld Ruflia in fubjection near two hundred years. At length John Bafilides freed it from flavery, and enlarged its boundaries; but after his time, it was ruined again by civil wars.

Before the time of Peter the Great, Ruflia was neither fo powerful, fo well cultivated, fo populous, nor fo opulent as at prefent. It had no poffeffions in Finland, nor in Livonia; and this latter alone had been long worth more than all Siberia. The Coffacks were fill unfubjected, nor were the people of Aftracan reduced to obedience; what little trade was carried on, was rather to their difadvantage. The White Sea, the Baltic, the Pontus Eusinus, the fea of Afoph, and the C fpian fea, were entireIy ufelefs to a nation that had not a fingle fhip, nor even a term in their language to exprefs a fleet. If nothing more had been neceflary but to be fuperior to the Tartars, and the other nations of the notth, as far as China, the Ruffians undoubredly had that

## 72 <br> THE HISTORY

advantage; but they wanted to be brouzht upon an equality with civilized nations and to be in a condition one day of even furpalfing feveral of them, Such an undertaking appeared altogether impracticable, inafmuch as they had not a fingle fhip at fea, and were abfolutely ignorant of military difcipline by land ; nay, the molt common manufactures were hardly encouraged, and agriculture ittelf, the primum mobile of trade, lay neglected. This requires of a government; and it is to this that the Englifh are indebted, for finding in their corn, a treafure far fuperior to their woollen manufacture.

THis grofs neglect of the neceffary arts fufficiently fhews, that the people of Ruffia had no idea of the polite arts, which become neceffary in their turn, when we have been properly cultivated. They might indeed have fent fome of the natives to gain influction among foreigners; but the difference of languages, manners, and religion, oppofed it. Bea fides, there w s a law of fate and religion equally facred and deftructive to the welfare of the community, which prohibited any Ruffian from going out of his country, and thus condemned this people to eternal ignorance. I hey were in poffeffion of the moft extenfive dominions in the world, and yet every improvement was wanted amongit them. At length Peter was born, and Ruffia became a civilized ftate.

Happily, of all the great lawgivers who have lived in the world, Peter is the only one whofe hif-
OFRUSSIA.
tory is well known. Thofe of Thefeus and Romulus, who did far lefs than him, and of the founders of all civilized ftates, are blended with the molt abfurd fiftions; whereas here, we have the advantage of writing truths, which would pafs for fictions, were they not fo well attefted.

## 

## C H A P. III.

## The anceftors of Peter the Great.

TH E family of Peter the Great have been feated on the throne ever fince the year 1013. Before that time, Ruffia had undergone revolutions, which had retarded the reformation of her police, and the eftablifhment of the liberal arts. This has been the fate of all human focieties. No kingdom ever experienced more cruel troubles. In the year 15 7, the tyrant Boris Godonow affafinated Demetrius, the lawful heir, and ulurped the empire. A young monk took the name of Demetrius, pretending to be that prince who had efcaped from his affaflins, and with the affiftance of the Poles, and a confiderable party (which every tyrant has againft him) he drove out the ufurper, and feized the crown himfelf. The impoiture was difcovered as foon as he came to the fovereignty, becaufe the people were diffatisfied with his government; and he was neurdered,
dered. Three other falfe Demetrius's rofe up one after another. Such a fucceffion of impoftors mutt needs put a country into the utmoft confufion, The lefs men are civilized, the more eafily they are impofed on. It may readily be conceived, how much thefe frauds augmented the public confution and misfortunes. The Poles, who had begun thofe revolutions, by fetting up the firft falfe Demetrius, were very near being mafters of Ruffia. The Swedes Bhared in the fpoils on the coatt of Finland, and alfo laid claim to the crown. The thate feemed on the brink of utter deflruction

In the midft of thefe troubles, an affembly, compofed of the principal boyats, chofe for their fove. reign a young man only fifteen years of age: this happened in 1613, and did not feem the beft method of putting an end to there troubles. This young man was Michael Komanow t, grand-father to Czar Peter, and fon to the archbifhop of Roftow, firnamed Pbilaretes, and of a nun, and related by the morher's fode to the ancient Czars.
IT muft be remembered, that this archbifiop was a powerful nobleman, whom the tyrant Boris had obliged to become prieft. His wite Scheremetow was hikewife forced to take the veil; this was the ancient cufiom of the weftern tyrants of the Latin church, as that of putting out the eyes, was with the Greek Chritians. Ite tyrant Demetrius made Pbilanetes archbifhop of Rothow, and fent him ambeffador to Poland, where he was kept prifoner by

[^5]
## OFRUSSIA.

the Poles, who were then at war with the Ruffians; the law of nations was not known to the different people of thefe times. During his father's confinement, that young Romanow was elected Czar. The archbifhop was exchanged againft fome Polith prifoners ; and at his return, his fon raifed him to the patriarchal dignity, and the old man was in reality king under his ion's name.
$I_{F}$ fuch a government appears furprifingly odd to frangers, the marriages of Czar Michael Romanow will feem ftill more fo. The Ruffian princes had never intermarried with foreign flates fince the year 1490 , or after they became mafters of Cafan and Aftracan; they feem to have followed the Afiatic cuftoms in almoft every thing, and efpecially that of marrying only among their own fubjects.

This conformity to the ancient cuftoms of Afia, was ftill more confpicuous in the ceremionies obferved at the marriage of a Czar. All the inoft beautiful maidens in the province were fent for to court, where they were received by the grand gourernante of the court, and provided with apartments in her own houfe, where they all eat together. The Czar vilited them fometimes incognito, and fome. times in his real character. The wedding day was fixed, without its being known on whom the choice had fallen. At the appointed time, the happy perfon was prefented with a rich wedding fuit, and other rich drefles were given to the refl of the fair candidates, who then returned home. There have been four inflances of thefe marriages.

After this manner was Michael Romanow e-
VoL. I. E fpoufed

## THE HISTORY

fpoufed to Eudocia, the daughter of a poor genileman, named Strefchneu. He was employed in ploughing his grounds with his fervants, when one of the lords of the bed-chamber came to him with prefents from the Czar , and to acquaint him that his daughter was feated on the throne. The name of this princefs is ftill held in the higheft efteem by the Ruffians. This cufiom is quite different from ours, but not the lefs to be valued on that account.

It is proper to oblerve, that before Romanow was elected Czar, a frong party had made choice of prince Ladiflaus, fon to Sigifmund III king of Poland. At the fame time, the provinces, bordering on Sweden, had offered the crown to a brother of Guftavus Adolphus: fo that Ruffia was in the fame fituation then in which we have fo frequently feen Poland, where the right of electing a king has been the occafion of civil wars. But the Ruffians did not follow the example of the Poles, who entered into a compact with the prince whom they elected; notwithftanding they had fuffered from the oppreffion of tyrants, yet they voluntarily fubmitted to a young mall, without making any bargain with him. Russia never was an eiective kingdom ; but the male line of their ancient fovereigns failing, and fix Czars, or pretenders, having perifhed miferably in the late troubles, there was, as we have obberved, a neceffity for electing a monarch; and this eleation occafioned frefh wars with Poland and Sweden, who maintained, with force of arms, their pretended rights to the crown of Ruffia. The right of governing a nation againft its own will, can never be

## OFRUSSIA.

be long fupported. The Poles, on their fide, after having advanced as far as Mofcow, and committed great depradations, in which the military expeditions of thofe times chiefly confilted, concluded a truce for fourteen years. By virtue of this truce Poland remained in poffeffion of the duchy of Smolenfko, in which the Borifthenes has its fource. The Swedes alfo made peace, in virtue of which they remained in poffeffion of Ingria, and deprived the Ruffians of all communication with the Baltic fea, fo that the empire of Ruffia was feparated more than ever from the reft of Europe.

Michael Romanow, after this peace, reigned quietly, without making any alteration in the fate, either to the improvement or corruption of the adminiftration. After his death, which happened in 1645 , his fon Alexis Michaelowitz (or fon of Michael) afcended the throne by hereditary right, at the age of fixteen years. The Czars were always crowned by the patriarch of Ruffia, according to the ceremonies in ufe at Conftantinople, except that the patriarch of Ruffia was feated on the fame feat with the fovereign, and conftantly affected an equality highly derogatory to the fupreme power.

## Alexis Michaelowitz, the fon of Michael.

Alexis was married in the fame manner as his father, and from among the young maidens prefented to him, he chofe the one who appeared the moft, lovely in his eyes. He married a daughter of the E 2 boyar

## $7^{8}$

 THE HISTORYboyar Meloflaufki in 1647; his fecond wife, whom the married in 16 I, was of the family of Narifkin, and his favourite Morofou was married to another. There cannot be a more fuitable title found for this favourite than that of vifir, for he governed the empire in a defpotic manner, and, by his great power, excited feveral commotions among the Strelitzes, and the populace, as frequently happens at Conftantinople.

The reign of Alexis was difturbed by bloody infurrections, and by inteftine and foreign wars. A chief of the Don Coffacks, named Stenko-Rafin, endeavoured to make himfelf mafter of Aftracan, and was for a long time very formidable: but he was at length defeated and taken prifoner, and end. ed his life by the hands of the executioner; like all thofe adventurers, who have nothing to expect but a throne or a fcaffold. A bout twelve thoufand of his adherents are faid to have been hanged, on the high road of Aftracan. In this part of the woild, men being uninfluenced by religion, were to be governed only by rigour; and from this fe. verity, frequently carried to a degree of cruelty, arofe flavery, and a feeret thirft of revenge.

Alexis had been at war with the Poles that proved fuccefsful, and terminated in a peace, which fecured to him the poffeffion of Smolenfko, Kiow, and the Ukraine: but he was defeated by the Swedes, and the boundaries of the Ruffian empire were con. tracted within a very narrow compais on that fide of the kingdom

The 「urks were at that time his moft formida-

## OF RUSSIA.

bie enemies : they invaded Poland, and threatened the dominions of the Czar that bordered upon Crim Tartary, the ancient Taurica Cherfonefus. In 1671, they took the important city of Kaminiek, and all that belonged to Poland in the Ukraine, The Coffacks of that country, ever averfe to ubjection, would not tell whether they belonged to the Turks, Poland, or Ruffia. Sultan Mahoniet IV. who had conquered the Poles, and had juft impofed a tribute upon them, demanded with all the haughtinefs of an Ottoman victor, that the Czar fhould immediately evacuate his pofieffions in the Ukraine; but received as haughty a denial from that prince. Men did not know at that time how to difguife their pride, by an outfide appearance of decency. The fultan, in his letter, ftiled the fovereign of the Ruffians only Cbriftian Hofpodar, and entitled himfelf, " moft glorious majefty, king of " the world." The Czar replied in thefe terms, " that he fcorned to fubmit to a Mahometan dog, " and that his fcimiter was as good as the Grand "Seignior's fabre."

Alexis at that time formed a defign which feemed to prefage the influence which the Ruffians would one day obtain in the Chriftian world. He fent ambaffadors to the Pope, and to almoft all the great fovereigns in Europe, excepting France, (which was in alliance with the Turks) in order to eftablifh a league againft the Ottoman Porte. His ambaffadors at the court of Rome had no other fuccefs but in not being obliged to kifs the Pope's toe; and in other courts they met only with good
wifhes, the quarrels of the Chriftian princes beo tween themfelves, and the jarring interefts arifing from thofe quarrels, being generally prevented from uniting againft the common enemy of Chriftianity.

In the mean time, the Turks threatened to chav ftife the Poles for refufing to pay their tribute : Czat Alexis affifted on the fide of Crim Tartary, and John Sobiefky, general of the crown, wiped off his country's ftain, by a fignal victory over the Tuiks, at the famous battle of Choczim in 1074, which paved his way to the throne. Alexis difputed this very throne with him, and offered to unite bis extenlive dominions to Poland, as the Jagellons had done; but in regard to Lithuania, the greatnefs of his offer was the caufe of its being rejected. He is faid to have been very deferving of the new kingdom, by the manner in which he governed his own fubjects. Alexis was the firft who caufed a body of laws to bedigefted in Ruffra, though imperfect; he introduced both linen and filk manufactures, which indeed were not long continued; yet he had the merit of their firft eftablifhment. He peopled the deferts about the Wolga and the Kama, with Li thuanian, Polifh and Tartarian families, whom he had taken prifoners in his wars: before his reign, all prifoners of war were the flaves of thofe to whofe lot they fell. Alexis employed them in agriculture: he did his utmoft endeavours to introduce difcipline among thofe troops: in a word, he was worthy of being the father of Peter the Great; but he had no time to perfect what he had be-
gung
gun, being fnatched away by a fudden death, at the age of forty fix, in the beginning of the year 1677, according to our ftile, which is eleven days forwarder than that of Ruflia.

## Foedor, or Theodore Alexiowitz.

UPON the death of Alexis, fon of Michael, all relapfed into confufion. He left by his firtt marriage two princes, and two princeffes. Theodore, the eldeft, afcended the throne at fifteen years of age $\delta$. He was a prince of a weak and fickly confitution, but of merit fuperior to his bodily infirmicies. His father Alexis had caufed him to be acknowledged his fucceffor, a year before his death: a conduct obferved by the kings of France from Hugh Capet down to Lewis the Young, and by many other fovereigns.

The fecond fon of Alexis was Iwan or John, who was ftill worfe treated by nature than his bro* ther Theodore, being almoft blind and dumb, very. infirm, and frequently troubled with convulfions. Of fix daughters, born of this firft marriage, the only one who made any figure in Europe was the princefs Sophia, who was remarkable for her great talents ; but unhappily fill more fo for the mifchief fhe defigned againft Peter the Great.

Alexis, by his fecond marriage with another of his fubjects, daughter of the boyar Narilkin, had

$$
\begin{gathered}
81677 \\
\text { E } 4
\end{gathered}
$$

Peter,

Peter, and the princefs Nathalia. Peter was born on the thirtieth of May (or the tenth of June, new file) in 1672 ; and was but four years old when he loft his father. As the children of a fecond marriage were not much regarded in Ruffia, it was Jittle expected that be would ever mount the throne.

It had ever been the fludy of the family of Romanow to civilize the empire. It was alfo that of Theodore. We have already remarked in fpeaking of Mofcow, that this prince encouraged the inhabitants of that city to build a great number of fone houfes. He likewife greatly enlarged that capital, and made feveral ufeful regulations in the general police ; but by endeavouring to reform the boyars, he made them all his enemies: befides, he wanted fufficient knowledge, vigour, and refolution, to venture upon making a general reformation. The wat with the Turks, or rather with the Crim Tartars, in which he was conftantly engaged with alternate fuccefs, would not permit a prince of his weak flate of health to undertake fo great a work. Theodore, like the reft of his predeceffors, married one of his own fubjects, a native of the frontiers of Poland; but having loft her in lefs than a year after their nuptials, he took for his fecond wife, in 1682 , Martha Matweowna, daughter of fecretary Apraxin. Some months after this marriage, he was feized with the diftemper which ended his days, and died without leaving any iffue. As the Czars married without regard to birth, they might likewife (at lealt at that time) appoint a fucceffor without refpect to primogeniture. The dignity of con-
fort and heir to the fovereign feemed to be entirely the reward of merit; and in that refpect, the cuftom of this empire was much fuperior to thofe of more civilized nations.

Theodore, before he expired, fenfible that his brother Iwan was by his natural infirmities incapable of governing, appointed his brother Peter heir to the empire, who being then in his tenth year, had given early proofs of a fine genius.

If, on the one hand, the cuftom of raifing a fubject to the rank of Czarina, was favourable to the females, thete was another which was no lefs hard upon them; namely, that the daughters of the Czars were very feldom married, but fpent their lives in a monaftery.

The princefs Sophia, third daughter of Czar Alexis, by his firf marriage, had abilities, equally great and dangerous. Perceiving that her brother Theodore had not long to live, fhe did not retire to a convent; but finding herfelf likely to be left between two brothers, one of whom was incapable of governing, through his natural inability, and the other, on account of his infancy, fhe formed a defign of placing herfelf at the head of the empire. Hence, in the laft hours of the Czar Theodore, the attempted to act the part that Pulcheria had formerly played with ber brother, the emperor Theodofius.
CHAP. IV.

JOHN and PETER.

Horrible Sedition among the Strelitzes *.

THEODORE was fearcely dead $\ddagger$, when the nomination of a prince of ten years old to the throne, the exclufion of the elder brother, and the intrigues of the princefs Sophia, their fifter, excited a moft bloody revolt amongft the Strelitzes. Never did the Janizaries, nor the Prrotorian guards, exercife more horrible cruelties. The infurrection began two days after the burial of Theodore, when they all ran to arms in the Cremelin, which is the Czar's palace at Mofcow. They began with accufing nine of their colonels, for keeping back their pay. The miniftry was obliged to break the colo nels, and to pay the Strelitzes the money they demanded : but this did not fatisfy them ; they infifted upon baving thefe nine officers delivered up to them, and condemned them by a majority of votes, to fuffer the Battogs or Knout ; which puniffiment was inflicted in this manner.

[^6]The criminal is ftripped naked, and laid flat on his belly, while two executioners beat over the back with fwitches, till the judge, who ftands by to fee the fentence put in execution, fays, "He has got enough." The colonels, after being thus treated by their men, were obliged to return them thanks, according to the cuftom of the eaftern nations; where criminals, after undergoing their punifhment, muft kifs the judge's hand. Befides complying with this cuftom, the officers gave them a fum of money, which was fomething more than the cuftom.

While the Strelitzes thus began to make themfelves formidable, the princefs Sophia, who privately encouraged them, in order to lead them by degrees from crime to crime, held an affembly at her houfe, confifting of the princeffes of the blood, the generals of the army, the boyars, the patriarch, the bifhops, and even fome of the principal merchants; fhe reprefented to them, that prince John, by right of birth and merit, was entitled to the empire, the reins of which the intended to keep in her own hands. At the breaking up of the aflembly, the caufed a promife to be made to the Strelitzes, of an addition of pay, befides feveral confiderable prefents. Her emiffaries were employed to ftir up the foldiery againft the Narifkin family, particularly the two brothers of the young dowager Czarina, the mother of Peter the Firlt. Thefe perfuaded the Strelitzes, that one of the brothers, named John, had put on the imperial robes, had feated himfelf on the throne, and had attempted to ftrangle prince John; adding, moreover, that the late Czar Theodore had been

## THE HISTORY

poifoned by Da-iel Vongad, a Dutch phyfician. Afterwards Sophia put into their hands a lift of forty noblemen, whom the ftiled enemies to their corps, and to the fate, and as fuch worthy of death. Thefe proceedings exactly refembled the profcriptions of Sylla, and the Roman triumvirate, which Chriftiern II. revived in Denmark and Sweden, This fhews that fuch cruelties prevail in all countries in times of anarchy and confufion. The mutineers began the tragedy with throwing the two knezes, Dolgorouki and Matheof, out of the palacewindows; whom the Strelitzes received upon the points of their pikes; then fripped them naked, and dragged their dead bodies into the great fquare; they then rufhed into the palace, where meeting with Athanafius Narifkin, a brother of the young Czarina, and one of the uncles of Czar Peter, they murdered him in the fame manner; then breaking open the door of the neighbouring church, where three of the profcribed perfons bad taken refuge, they drag them from the altar, firip them naked, and cut them in pieces with knives.

Thein fury was arrived to fuch a pitch, that feeing a young nobleman of the family of Soltikoff, a great favourite of theirs, and who was not included in the lift of the proferibed, and fome of them miftaking him for John Narıkin, whom they were in fearch of, they murdered him upon the fpot; and what plainly fhews the manners of thofe times, after having difcovered their error, they carried the body of the young noble to his father to bury it; and the wretched parent, not daring to complain,
gave them a confiderable reward for bringing him the mangled body of his fon. Being upbraided by his wife, his daughters, and the lady of the deceafed, for his weaknefs, "Let us wait an opportunity of being revenged," faid the old man. Thefe words being overheard by iome of the foldiers, they returned furioully back into the room, dragged the aged parent by the hair, and cut his throat at his own door.

Another party of the Strelitzes, who were in fearch of the Dutch phyfician Vongad, met with his fon, of whom they enquired for his father; the youth trembling, replied, he did not know where he was; upon which they immediately killed him. Soon after a German phyfician falling in their way, 6r You are a doctor, faid they, and if you did not poifon our matter Theodore, you have poifoned others, and therelore merit death," and thereupon they difpatched him.

AT length they found the Dutchman, of whom they were in queft, difguifed in the habit of a beggar; they inftantly drag him before the palace: the princeffes who loved this worthy man, and placed great confidence in his fkill, begged the Strelitzes to fpare him, affuring them that he was a very good phyfician, and had taken all poffible care of their brother Theodore. The Strelitzes made anfwer, that he not only deferved to die as a phylician, but alfo as a forcerer; and that they had found in bis cabinet a great dried toad, and the Akin of a ferpent. They alfo required to have young Narikin delivered up to them, whom they had fearched
fearched for in vain for two days; infinting, that he was certainly in the palace, and that they would fet fire to it, unlefs he was put into their hands, The fifter of John Narifkin, and the other prin* ceffes, terrified by their menaces, went to acquaint their unhappy brother with what had paffed : upon which the patriarch heard his confeffion, adminifters the viaticum and extreme unction to him, and then taking an image of the bleffed virgin which was faid to perform miracles, he leads the young man forth by the hand, and prefents him to the Strelitzes, prefenting to them, at the fame time, the image of the virgin. The princeffes, diffolved in tears, furrounded Narifkin, and falling upon their knees before the foldiers, befought them, in the name of the bleffed virgin, to fpare their relan tion's life; but the inhuman wretches tore him from their arms, and dragged him to the foot of the fairs, together with the phyfician Vongad, where they held a kind of tribunal amongtt themfelves, and condemned them both to be put to the torture. One of the foldiers, who could write, drew up a form of indictment, and fentenced the two unfortunates to be cut in pieces; a punifhment inflicted in China and Tartary on parricides, and called the punifhment of ten thoufand dices. After having thus ufed Narifkin and Vongad, they expofed their heads, feet and hands, on the iron points of a balluftrade.

While this party of the Strelitzes were thus glutting their revenge in the fight of the primceffes, the reft maffacred every one who was ob-

## OF RUSSIA:

noxious to them, or fufpected by the princers Sophia.

THis horrid tragedy concluded with proclaiming the two princes, John and Peter, in June 168 2, joint fovereigns, and affociating their fifter Sophia with them in the government, in the quality of co-regent; who then publickly approved of all their outrages, conferred upon them rewards, confifcated the eftates of the profcribed, and beftowed them upon their murderers. She gave them permiffion to erect a monument, with the names of the per fons they had maffacred, as being traitors to their country: and to crown all, fhe publifhed letters patent, thanking them for their zeal and fidelity.

## 

> C H A P. V.

## Adminisration of the Princess Sophia.

Extraordinary quarrel about religion. A conSpiracy $\dagger$.

「萛HESE were the fteps by which the princefs Sophia did afcend the throne of Ruffia, with-
$\dagger$ Extracted intirely from the memoirs communicated by the court of Petersburg.
out being declared Czarina ; and thele the examples that Peter the First had before his eyes. Sophia enjoyed all the honours of a fovereign; her buft was on the coin; the figned all difpatches, held the chief place in council, and a fupreme power without controul. She was poffeffed of a great deal of wit, made verfes in her own language, and both wrote and fpoke extremely well. An agreeable perfon fet off thefe talents, which her ambition alone fullied.

She procured a wife for her brother John, in the manner already fhewn in feverral examples. A young lady, named Soltikoff, of the family with the noblemen of that name who had been murdered by the feditious Strelitzes, was chofen out of the heart of Siberia, where her father commanded a fortrefs, to be prefented to Czar John at Mofcow. Her beauty triumphed over all the intrigues of her rivals, and John was married to her in 1084 . At every marriage of a Czar, we feem to read the hiflory of Ahafuerus, or that of a fecond Theodofius.

In the midft of the marriage feafts, the Strelitzes raifed a new infurrection, (and who would believe it?) on account of religion! of a particular doctrine! If they had been mere foldiers, they would never have become controvertifts, but they were citizens of Mofcow. Whoever can harangue the populace in an authoritative manner, may found a fecl. This has been feen in all ages, and all parts of the world, efpecially fince the paffion of dogmatifing has become the inftrument of ambition and the means of inflaving weak minds.

## OFRUSSIA.

Russia had already experienced fome feditions upon a difpute, whether the fign of the crofs was to be made with three fingers, or with two? One A bakum, a prieft, had fet up fome new doctrines at Mofcow, about the holy Ghoft ; which, according to the fcriptures, enlightened all the faithful; as likewife with refpect to the equality of the primitive Chriftians, and thefe words of Chrift, "There thall be amongft you neither firft nor laft." Several citizens, and many of the Strelitzes, embraced the opinions of Abakum. One Rafpop was the chief of this party, which became confiderable. Thofe enthufiafts, at length, entered the cathedral, July 16 N. S. 1682 . where the patriarch and his clergy were officiating; drove them out of the church with fones, and feated themfelves very devoutly in their places, to receive the boly Ghoft. They called the patriarch the " wolf in theep's cloathing;" a title which all fects have liberally beftowed upon each other. The princefs Sophia, and the two Czars, were immediately made acquainted with thefe difturbances; and the other Strelitzes, who were ftaunch to the good old caufe, were given to underftand, that the Czars and the church were in danger. Upon this the Strelitzes and the patriarchal burghers attacked the Abakumilts; but a fop was put to the carnage, by publiihing a convocation of a council, which was immediately affembled in a hall of the palace. This took up very little time, for they obliged every prieft they met to attend. The patriarch, and a bifhop, difputed againft Kafpop; but at the fecond fyllogifm,
they began to throw ftones at one another. The council ended with ordering Rafpop to be beheaded, and fome of his faithful difciples to be put to death; and this fentence was executed by the order of the three fovereigns, Sophia, John and Peter.

DURING thefe troubles, there was a knez, named Chowanfkoi, who, having been inftrumental in raifing the princefs Sophia to the dignity fhe then held, expected, as a reward for his fervices, to have a fhare in the adminiftration. He found Sophia not fo grateful as he could wifh; upon which he efpoufed the caufe of religion, and the perfecuted Rafpopians, and firred up a party among the Strelitzes and the people, in defence of the caufe of God.

This confpiracy was of a more ferious nature than the enthufiaftic riot of Rafpop. An ambitious hypocrite always carries things farther tha a fimple fanatic. Chowanfkoi aimed at no lefs than the imperial dignity; and to remove all obitacles in his way, he refolved to murder the two Czars, Sophia, the other princeffes, and every one who was attached to the imperial family. The Czars and the princeffes were obliged to retire to the mo* naftery of the Holy Trinity, within twelve leagues of Mofcow. This was, at the fame time, a convent, a palace, and a fortrefs, like mount Caffino, Corby, Fulda, Kempten, and feveral others belonging to the Latin chorch. This monaftery of the Trinity belongs to the monks of St. Bafil. It is furrounded by deep ditches, and ramparts of brick, on which is planted a numerous artillery. The monks
OFRUSSIA.
monks are poffeffed of all the country round for four leagues. The imperial family were in full fafety there, but more on account of the ftrength, than the fanctity of the place. Here Sophia treated with the rebel knez; and having decoyed him to come half way, caufed his head to be ftruck off, together with thofe of one of his fons, and thirty feven Strelitzes who accompanied him *.

UPON this being made known, the body of the Strelizes fly to arms, and march to attack the convent of the Trinity, threatening to deftroy every thing that come in their way. The imperial family ftood upon their defence; the boyars arm their vaffals, all the gentlemen flock into the convent, and a bloody civil war feemed on the point of breaking out. The patriarch fomewhat pacified the Strelitzes, who began to be frightened with the number of troops that were marching to furround them on all fides; in fhort, their fury was changed into fear, and their fear into the moft abject fubmiffion; a change common to the mob. Three thoufand feven hundred of this corps, followed by their wives and children, with halters about their necks, went in proceffion to the convent of the Trinity, which three days before they had threatened to burn. In this condition, thefe unhappy wretches prefent themfelves before the gate of the convent, two by two, one carrying a block, and another an ax; and proftrating themfelves on the ground, waited for their fentence. They were pardoned upon their

## 94

 THE HISTORTfubmiffion, and returned back to Mofcow, bleffing their fovereigns; and ftill difpofed, though unknown to themfelves, to commit the fame crime upon the very firft opportunity.

These commotions being fubfided, the fate refumed an exterior of tranquillity ; but Sophia fill remained poffeffed of the chief authority, leaving John to his incapacity, and keeping Peter in tutelage. In order to ftrengthen her power, fhe fhared it with prince Bafil Galitzin, whom the raifed to be generalifimo, minifter of ftate, and lord-keeper, Galitzin was in every refpect fuperior to any other perfon in that diftracted court : he was polite, mag. nificent, full of great defigns, more learned than any of his countrymen, having received a much better education, and was even mafter of the Latin tongue, which was, at that time, almoft entirely unknown in Ruffia. He was of an active and in defatigable fpirit, had a genius fuperior to the times he lived in, and capable, had he had leifure and power, as he had the inclination, of reforming the manners in Ruffia. This is the character given of him by La Neuville, at that time the Polifh envoy in Ruffia; and the encomiums of foreigners are feldom to be fufpected.

Tais minifter bridled the infolence of the Strelitzes, by diftributing the moft mutinous of that body among the feveral regiments in the Ukraine, in Cafan, and Siberia. It was under his adminiftration, that the Poles, long the rivals of Ruffia, gave up, in 1686 , all pretenfions to the large pro* vinces of Smolenko and the Ukraine. He was the

## OFRUSSIA.

firf who fent an embaffy to France, in 1687 ; a country, which had for upwards of twenty years been in the zenith of its glory, by its numerous conquefts, new eftablifhments, and the magnificence of Lewis XIV. and efpecially by the improvement of the fine arts, without which there can be only external grandeur, but no folid glory. France had not then entered into any corrépondence with Ruffia, or rather was unacquainted with that empire; the academy of infcriptions ordered a medal to be ffruck to commemorate this embafo fy , as if it had come from the moft diftant part of the Indies ; but notwithflanding all this, the ambaffador Dolgoroufki mifcarried in his negotiation, and even fuffered fome grofs affronts on account of the ill conduct of his domeflics, whofe miftakes it would have been better to have overlooked; but the court of Lewis XIV. could not then forefee, that France and Ruffia would one day reckon it an advantage to be cemented by a clofe alliance.

Russia was now quiet at home, but fhe was ftill pent up on the fide of Sweden, though enlarged towards Poland, her new ally, in continual alarms on the fide of Crim Cartary, and at variance with China in regard to the frontiers.

The greateft grievance the empire laboured under was, that it had not yet attained to a vigorous and regular adminilltration, that the Khan of the Crim Tartars exacted an annual tribute of fixty thoufand rubles, in the nature of that which the Turks had laid on Poland.

Crim Tartary is the ancient Taurica Cherfonefus,
nefus, formerly fo famous by the commerce of the Greeks, and fill more by their fables, a fruitful but barbarous country. It took its name of Crimea or Crim, from the title of its firft Khans, who took this name before the conquefts of the fons of Gengis-Khan. To free the country from this yoke, and wipe off the difgrace of fuch a tribute, the prime minifter, Galitzin, marched in perfon into Crim Tartary at the head of a numerous army $t$. Thefe armies are not to be compared to the prefent troops; they had no difcipline; there was hardly one regiment completely armed; they had no uniform cloathing, no regularity: their men indeed were inured to hard labour and a fcarcity of provifions, but then they carried with them fuch a prodigious quantity of baggage, as far exceeded any thing of the kind in our camps, where the greato eft luxury prevails. Their vaft numbers of wag. gons for carrying ammunition and provifions, in an uninhabitable and defart country, greatly retarded the expedition againft Crim Tartary. The army found itfelt in the midft of the vaft defarts on the river Samara, unprovided with magazines. Here Galitzin did, what, in my opinion, was never done any where elfe: he employed thirty thoufand men in building a town on the banks of the Samara, to ferve as a place for magazines in the enfuing campaign : it was begun in one year, and finifhed in the third month of the following; the houfes in. deed were all of wood except two, which were
brick; the ramparts were of turf, but well lined with artillery; and the whole place was in a good ftate of defence.

This was all that was done of any confequence in this ruinous expedition. In the mean while, Sophia continued to govern in Mofcow, while John had only the name of Czar; and Peter, now at the age of feventeen, had the courage to aim at real fovereignty. La Neuville, the Polifh envoy, then refident at Mofcow, and who was eye witnefs to all that paffed, pretends that Sophia and Galitzin had engaged the new chief of the Strelitzes, to facrifice the young Czar to their ambition ; it appears, at leaft, that fix hundred of the strelitzes were to have made themfelves mafters of his perfon. The private memoirs, which have been intrufted to my perufal, by the court of Ruffia, affirm, that a fcene had actually been laid to murder Peter the Firft: the blow was on the point of being ftruck, and Ruflia near being deprived of a prince by whom fhe had been raifed into exiftence. I he Czar was once more obliged to take refuge in the convent of the Trinity, the ufual afylum of the court when threatened by the mutinous foldiers. There he affembled the boyars of his party, raifed a body of forces, treats with the captain of the Strelitz s, and fends for fome Germans, who had been long fettled in Mofow, and were all attached to his perfon, from his having already thewn himfelf the encourager of foreigners. Sophia and John continued at Mofcow, and ufed every art to engage the Strelitzes to remain firm to their interefts; but the
caufe of young Peter, who loudly complained of an attempt meditated againft himfelf and his mo. ther, prevailed over that of the princefs, and of a Czar, whofe very looks caufed contempt. All the accomplices were punifhed with a feverity to which that country was as muchaccuftomed, as to the crimes which occafioned it. Some were beheaded, after undergoing the punifhment of the knout or battocks. The chief of the Strelitzes was put to death in the fame manner, and feveral other fufpected perfons had their tongues cut out. Prince Galitzin efcaped with his life, through the interceffion of one of his relations, who was a favourite of Czar Peter; but he was ftripped of his eftates, which were immenfe, and banifhed to a place in the neighbourhood of Archangel. La Neuville, who was prefent at the whole of this cataftrophe, relates, that the fentence pronounced upon Galitzin, was in thefe terms. "Thou art commanded, by the moft merciful Czar, to repair to Karga, a town under the Pole, and there to continue the remainder of thy days. His majef $y$, out of his extreme goodnefs, allows thee three pence per day for thy fubfiftence."

I HERE is no town under the Pole. Karga is in the fixty fecond degree of latitude, and only fix degrees and a half further north than Mofcow. Whoever pronounced this fentence, muft have been a very bad geographer. La Neuville was probably impofed upon by a falfe account.
$\ddagger$ IHis fcene was finifhed by fending the prin$\ddagger 1089$.

## OFRUSSIA.

cefs Sophia back to her monaftery at Mofcow, after having fo long held the reins of government; and this revolution proved, to a woman of her difpofition, a fufficient punifhment.

From this inflant Peter began to reign in reality ; his brother John having no other fhare in the government, but that of Iending his name to all public acts. He led a retired life, and died in 1096.

C H A P. VI.

## The Reign of Peter the First.

## Beginning of the Grand Reformation.

$D$ETER the Great was tall and well-made, had a noble countenance, lively eyes, and a robuft conftitution, fitted for all labour and exercifes. He had a found underftanding, which is the foundation of all real talents; and to this folidity was joined an active difpofition, which prompted him to undertake and do great things. His education was far from being worthy of his genius. The princefs Sophia's defign was that be flould remain in ignorance, and to indulge himfelf in thofe exceffes which youth, idlenefs, cultom, and his high rank made allowable. Neverthelefs, he had been lately married $\dagger$, like others of his predeceffors, to one of his own fubjects, the daughter of colonel Lapuchin; but being young, and for fome

Vol. I. $\dagger$ In June 169.
time had not enjoyed any of the prerogatives of the crown, but that of indulging his pleafures without reflraint, the ties of wedlock were not always fufficient to keep him within juft bounds. His feaf. ing and caroufals with foreigners who had been invired to Mofoow by prince Galitzin, feemed not to promife that he would one day become the reformer of his country; however, in fpite of bad example, and even the allurements of pleafures, he applied himifelf to the arts of war and government, and which even then fhewed that he had fome feeds of greatnefs.

It was fill lefs expected, that a prince, who was fubject by his conttitution to fuch a dread of water as to fubject him to cold fweats, and even to convulfions, when he was obliged to crofs a fmall river, fhould become one of the beft feamen in all the north. In order to get the better of nia. ture, he began by jumping into the water, till at Jength this averfion was changed into a fondnefs for that element.

Hes was aftiamed at the ignorance in which he had been brought up He learned, almoft of himfelf, without the help of a malier, enough of High and Low Dutch, to be able to write and Ipeak tolerably well in both thefe languages. The Germans and Dutch he thought the moft civilized nations, becaufe the former had already erected in Mofcow fome of thofe arts and manufactures which he was defirous of feeing eft blithed in his empire; and the latter excelled in the art of navigation, which he already faw was the mot neceffary of all others.

Suen were the difpofitions that were in Peter, notwithftanding the follies of his youth. At the fame time, his fituation was hazardous, being obliged to guard againft factions at home, had the turbulent fpirit of the Strelizes to keep under, and an almoft uninterrupted war to manage againft the Crim Tartars. For though hoftilities had been fufpended in 1689 by a truce, it had no long continuance.

During this interval, Peter became confirmed in his defign of introducing the liberal arts into his country.
$H_{i s}$ father Alexis had, in his life-time, the fame views, but he wanted a favourable opportunity to carry them into execution. He tranfmitted his genius to his fon, who had fill a clearer idea of thefe matters than himfelf, was more vigorous, and more unfliaken by difficulties and obftacles.

Alexis had been at a great expence in fending for Bothler *, a fhip-builder and fea-captain from Holland, with a number of carpenters and failors. Thefe built a large frigate and a yacht upon the Wolga, which they navigated down that river to Aftracan, where they were to be employed in building more veffels, for carrying on an advantageous trade with Perfia by the Cafpian fea. Juft at this time the revolt of Stenka Rafin broke out ; and this rebel deftroyed thefe two veffels, which he ought to have preferved for his own fake, and murdered the captains. The reft of the crew fled into Perfia, from whence they got to fome fettlements be-

[^7]longing to the Dutch Eaft. India company. A ma-fler-builder, who was a good fhip-wright, faid behind in Ruflia, where he lived a long time in obfeurity.

One day, as Peter was walking at Ithmaelof, a fummer-palace built by his grand-father, he perceived, among feveral other rarities, an old Englifh fhallop, which had been entirely neglected: upon which he afked Timmerman, a German, and his mathematical teacher, how came that little boat to be of fo different a conftruction from any he had feen on the Molka? Timmerman replied, that it was made to go with fails and oars. The young prince wanted inftantly to make a trial of it ; but it was firft to be repaired and rigged. Brant, the thip builder above mentioned, was at laft found at Mofcow, where he lived retired; he foon put the boat in order, and failed with her upon the river Yauza, which wafhes the fuburbs of the town.

PETER caufed his boat to be removed to a great lake in the neighbourhood of the convent of the Trinity, where he made Brant build two more fri-ga-es, and three yachts, and piloted them himfelf. A confiderable cime afterwards, viz in 109a, he took a journey to Archangel, and having ordered Brant to build a fmall veffel, he embarked therein on the Frozen ocean, which no fovereign befide himielf had ever beheld. On this occafion he was efcorted by a Durch man of war, under the command of Captain JClion, and attended by all the neichant veffels then in the harbour of Archanget. Hethad already learned the manner of work.
ing a thip; and notwithflanding the pains his courtiers took to imitate their mafter, he was the only one who underflood it.

He found it as difficult to raife a well difciplined body of land forces on whom he could depend, as to eflablith a navy. His firft effay in navigation, on a lake, previous to his journey to Archangel, was looked upon only as the amufement of a young prince of genius; and his firf attempt to form a body of difciplined troops, likewife appeared as no more than that of diverfion. This happened during the regency of the princefs Sophia; and had he been fufpected of meaning any thing elfe, by this amufement, it might have been attended witly fatal confequences to the young hero.

He placed his confidence in a foreigner, the celebrated Le Fort, of a noble and ancient family in Piedmont, who removed near two centuries ago to Geneva, where they have filled the moft confiderable pofts in the ftate. He was intended to have been brought up to trade, to which that city is indebted for its prefent importance, having formerly been remarkable only for religious controverfies.

But his genius, which prompted him to the greatef undertakings, engaged him to quit his father's houfe at the age of fourteen; and he ferved four years in quality of a cadet in the citadel of Marfeilles; from thence he went to Holland, where he ferved fome time as a volunteer, and was wounded at the fiege of Grave, a fortified town on the Meufe, which the prince of Orange, afterwards king of England, retook from Lewis XIV. in 1694 . Af-
ter this, led by hopes of preferment, wherever he could find it, he embarked with a German colo nel, named Verfin, who had obtained a commiffion from Peter's father, the Czar Alexis, to raife foldiers in the Netherlands, and bring them to Archangel. But when he arrived at that port, after a moft fatiguing and dangerous navigation, the Czar Alexis was dead ; the government was changed, and Mufcovy in confufion. The governor of Archangel fuffered Verftin, Le Fort, and his whole troop, to remain a long time in the utmoft poverty and diftrefs, and even threatened to fend them into the extremity of Siberia; upon which every man fhifted for himfelf. Le Fort, in great neceffity, repaired to Mofcow, where he waited upon the Danifh refident, named de Horn, who made him his fecreary: there he learned the Ruffian language, and fome time afterwards found means to be introduced to the Czar Peter; the elder brother Iwan not being a perfon for his purpofe. Peter was taken with him, and immediately made him a captain of foot. Le Fort did not underftand much of the military fervice, he was unlearned, not having ftudied any particular art or fcience; but he had feen a great deal, and was capable of making the moft of what he faw. Like the Czar, he owed every thing to bis own genius; he underfood the German and Dutch languages, which Peter was learning at that time. Every thing confpired to make him agreeable to Peter, to whom he ftrictly attached himfelf. From being the companion of his pleafures, he became his favourite, and confirm-

## OFRUSSIA.

ed himfelf in that ftation by his good qualities. The Czar made him his confident in the moft dangerous defign that a prince of that country coull poffibly form, namely, that of putting himfelf in a condition to be able one day to break the feditious and barbarous body of forces called the Strelitzes. It had coft the great Sultan Ofman his life for attempting to reform the Janizaries. Peter, young as he was, went to work in a much abler manner than Ofman.

He began with forming, at his country-feat at Preobrazinfki, a company of fifty of his youngeft doneftics; and fome young genvlemen, the fons of boyars, were chofen for their officers: but in order to teach them fubordination, to which they were wholly unaccutomed, he made them pafs through all the different military degrees, and himfelf let them the example, by ferving firft as a drummer, then as a private foldier, a ferjeant, and a lieutenant of a company. Nothing was ever more ufeful than this conduct. The Ruflians had hitherto made war after the manner of our anceftors at the time of the feudal tenures, when the nobles took the field at the head of their vaffals, undifciplined, and ill armed: a barbarous method, fufficient indeed to act again ft the like armies, but of no ufe againft regular troops.

THis company, which was raifed wholly by Peter himfelf, foon increafed in numbers, and became afterwards the regiment of Preobrazinfki guards. Another regiment, formed on the fame F 4 plan, guards.

Phe Czar now had a regiment of five thoufand foot that could be depended upon, trained by general Gordon, a Scotiman, and compofed almoft entirely of foreigners. Le Fort, who had feen vesy little real fervice, but whofe capacity was equal to every thing, undertook to raife a regiment of twelve thoufand men, which he performed: five colonels were appointed to ferve under him, and be faw himfelf on a fudden general of this little army, which had been raifed, as much to oppofe the Strelitzes, as the enemies of the flate.

ONE thing worthy of being obferved *, and which fully confutes that error of thofe who pretend, that France loft very few of its inbabitants by the revocation of the edict of Nantz, is, that one third of this army, which was only called a regiment, confifted of Freneh refugees. Le Fort difciplined his new troops, as if he had been a foldier all his lifetime.

Peter was defirous of feeing one of thofe mock. fights, which had been lately introduced in times of peace : a fort was erected, which was to be attacked by one part of his new troops, and defended by the other. The difference between this fight and others of the like nature, was, that inftead of a fham engagement, this was a real one, in which fome of his men were flain, and a great many wounded. Le Fort, who commanded the attack,

[^8]recei
vec
ferinio
but
It Car Fort
received a conGderable wound. Thefe bloody fports were intended to initiate the young troops into the fervice of the field; but it required both much labour and trouble.

These warlike amufements did not take off the Czar from his naval project. As he had made Le Fort a general by land, notwithftanding his having never commanded, he now made him admiral, tho' he had never had the direction of a fhip, but he knew him deferving both of the c.e and the other. It is true, he was an admiral without a fleet, and a general with no other troops but his own regiment.

By degrees the Czar reformed that great abufe in the army, viz. the independance of the boyars, who, in time of war, ufed to take the field with a multitude of their vaffals and peafants: this was exactly the ancient government of the Franks, Huns, Goths, and Vandals, who indeed fubdued the Roman empire in its ftate of decline, but would have been eafily deftroyed, bad they had the difciplined legions of ancient Rome to encounter, or fuch armies as are now brought into the field.

Admiral Le Fort was not long, however, before he had fomething more than an empty title. He employed fome Dutchmen and Venetians in building a number of long-boats, and alfo two fhips of about thirty guns each, at the mouth of the Woroniz, which falls into the Tanais, or Don: thefe veffels were to fall down the river, and keep the Crim Tartars in awe, with whom hoftilities had been renewed.

108 THE HISTORY
The Czar was now to determine in 1680 , aagainft which of the following powers he would declare war, whether againft the Turks, the Swedes, or the Chinefe. But here it will be proper to take notice on what terms he then flood with China, which was the firft treaty of peace concluded by that nation.

## C H A P. VII.

## Congrefs and treaty with the Chinefe ".

WE muft firft flew what were the limits of the Chinefe and Ruffian empires at this period. After paffing through Siberia, properly fo called, and leaving far behind us to the fouth, an bundred hords of Tartars, white and black Calmucks, and Mahometan and Pagan Moguls, we advance to the hundred and thirtieth degree of longiture, and the fifty fecond of latitude, upon the river Amur. To the northward is a great chain of mountains, which extend as far as the Frozen Sea, beyond the polar circle. This river, which runs the fpace of five hundred leagues in Siberia and Chinefe Tartary, lofes itfelf after various turn. ings in the fea of Kamtfhatka. It is affirmed, that

* Extracted from memoirs fent from China; alfo from thofe of Putersburg, and from letters publifhed in Du Halde's hiflory of Chins,
at its mouth, in this fea, there is fometimes caught a monftrous filh, much larger than the hippopotamus of the Nile, and that the tooth thereof is harder and whiter than ivory. It is further pretended that this ivory was formerly an object of commerce; that they ufed to tranfport it through Siberia, which is the reafon why feveral pieces of it are Atill found buried in the fields This is the moft probable account of this foffil ivory, of which we bave already fpoken; for it appears highly chimerical to pretend, that formerly there were elephants in Siberia.

The Amur is likewife called the Black river by the Mantchoux Tartars, and the Dragon river by the Chinefe.

It was in thefe countries, which for a number of years had not been fo much as heard of, that the Ruffians and Chinefe contefled the limits of their empires $t$. The Ruffians had fome forts on the river Amur, about three hundred leagues from the great wall. Many hoftilities had arifen between thefe two nations on account of thefe forts: at length both began to underfland their interefts better; the emperor Camhi preferred peace and commerce to an unprofitable war, and fent feveral ambaffadors to Niptchou, one of thofe fettlements. Ihe ambaffadors had five thoufand men in their retinue, including their efcort. This was Afiatic pomp; but what was very remarkable is, that there was not one example in the annals of the empire, of an embafly being fent to another power; and what is $\dagger$ Memoirs of the Jefuits Pereira and Gerbillon.
fill more fingular, that the Chinefe had never concluded a treaty of peace fince the foundation of their monarchy. Though twice conquered by the Tartars, who attacked and fubjected them, they never made war upon any people, excepting a few hords that were quickly fubdued, or as quickly left to themfelves, without any treaty. So that this nation, fo renowned for morality, were intirely ignorant of what we call the "Law of nations;" that is to fay, of thofe vague rules of war and peace, of the privileges of foreign minifters, of the formalities of treaties, or of the obligations refulting from thence, nor of the difputes concerning precedency and point of honour.

But the chief difficulty arofe to know in what language were the Chinefe to negotiate with the Ruffians, in the midft of defacts. This was removed by two Jefuits, the one a Portuguefe, named Pereira, the other a Frenchman, whofe name vas Gerbillon. They fet out from Pekin with the Chinefe ambaffadors, and were themfelves the real negociators. They conferred in Latin with a Ger* man belonging to the Ruffian embafiy, who underftood that language. The chief of that embafly was Golowin, governor of Siberia, who had a more fplendid retinue than the Chinefe themfelves, and thereby gave a high idea of the Ruffian empire, to a people who thought themfelves the only powerful nation upon earth.

IHE Jefuits fixed the limits of both empires, at the river Kerbechi, near the fpot where the treaty was concluded. All the country, to the fouthward
of this line of partition，was adjudged to the Chi－ nefe，and the north to the Ruflians，who only fort a fmall fort which happened to have been built be－ yond the limits：a peace was agreed to，and after fome few altercations，both parties fiwore to obferve it，in the name of the fame God $\xi$ ；and in thele terms，＂If any one of us fhall entertain the leaft thought of renewing the flames of war，we befeech the fupreme Lord of all things，who knows the hearts of men，to punith the traitor with immedi－ ate death＂

From this form of treaty，figned by Chinefe and Chriftians，we may infer two important truchs： the firft，that the Chinefe government is neither a－ theiftical nor idolatrous，as has been frequently and falfly charged upon it．The fecond，that all nations， who cultivate the gift of realon and underftanding， do，in effect，acknowledge the fame God，notwith－ ftanding the particular errors they labour under， through the want of being properly educated．

This treaty was drawn up in Latin，and two copies were made of it．The Ruffian ambaffadors fet their names the firf to the copy that remained in their poffeffion，and the Chinefe alfo figned their＇s the firft，agreeable to the cuftom oblerved by Eu－ ropean nations，when two equal powers conclude a treaty with each other．On this occafion was oblerved another cuftom belonging to the Afiatic nations，and which was，indeed，that of the earlieft ages．The treaty was engraved on two large marble pillars，erected on the fpot，to determine the boun－ daries of the two empires．
§ September $8,168 \mathrm{~g}, \mathrm{~N}, \mathrm{~S}$, Memoirs of China，

Three years after this, the Czar fent Ifbrand Ides, a Dane, on an embaffy to China; and the commerce be then eftablifhed between the two nations, continued with advantage to each, till the rupture between them in the year $17 \angle 2$; but fince this fhort interruption, it has been renewed again with new vigour.
(T) C H A P. VIII.

Expedition to the PALUS Mieotis. Conqueft of ASOPH.

The Czar fends young gentlemen into foreign coun* tries for improvement.
' $\Gamma$ was not fo eafy to fettle peace with the Turks, and indeed the time feemed come for the Ruffians to raife themfelves upon their ruins. The Venetians, who had long groaned under their yoke, began now to retrieve their liffes. The Doge Morofini, the fame who had furrendered Candia to the Turks, afterwards took from them the Peloponnefus, whereby he obtained the title of Peloponnefian, an honour which revived the memory of the Roman republic. Leopold, emperor of Germany, had been fuccefsful againft the Ottoman forces in Hun-
gary ; and the Poles flopt the incurfions of the Crim Tartars.

Peter took advantage of there circumfances, to difcipline his troops, and to gain himfelf the empire of the Black sea. General Gordon marched along the Tanais, towards Afoph, with his numerous regiment of five thoufand men, followed by general Le Fort, with his regiment of twelve thoufand ; by a body of Strelitzes, under the command of Scheremetow and Schein, of Pruffinn extraction, by a body of Coffacks and a large train of artillery: in fhort, every thing was ready for this expedition*.

This Ruffian army began its march under the command of marfhal Scheremetow $\ddagger$, in the beginning of the fummer of 1695 , to attack the town of Afoph, at the mouth of the Tanais, and at the extremity of the Palus Mrotis, now called the Zabac fea. The Czar was with the army, but only as a volunteer, being determined to learn, before be took upon him to command. During their march, they ftormed two forts which the Turks bad erected on the banks of the river.

THis expedition was attended with confiderable difficulties. The place was well fortified, and defended by a numerous garrifon. A number of long-boats, refembling the lurkith faicks, and built by Venetians, with two fmall Dutch fhips of war, that were to fail out of the Woronitz, could not be got ready foon enough to enter the fea of $\Delta$ foph.

[^9]All beginnings meet with obfacles. The Ruffians had never yet made a regular fiege; and therefore mifcarried in this firft attempt.

Mr. Jacob, a native of Dantzick, had the direction of the artillery, under the command of general Schein ; for as yet they had none but foreign officers belonging to the train, and none but foreign engineers and pilots. This Jacob had been cono demned to the baftinade, or knout, by Schein, the Pruffian general. At that time rigorous difcipline was neceffary to frengthen command; and the Ruffians quietly fubmitted to it, notwithftanding their natural bent to mutiny ; and after the pu* nifhment, did their duty as ufual. But the Dane thought otherwife, and refolved to be revenged for the treatment he had received, and thereupon nailed up the cannon, deferted to the Turks, turned Mahometan, and defended Afoph, with great fuccefo, againft his former mafters. This inftance fhews, that the lenity, which is now practifed in Mofcovy, is much preferable to the former feverities; and is better calculated to retain thofe in their duty who have a proper fenfe of honour. It was abfolutely neceffary, at that time, to ufe the utmoft rigour towards the common people; but fince their manners have been altered, the emprefs Elizabeth has compleated, by clemency, the work her father begun, by the authority of the laws. This lenity has been extended by this princefs, to a degree unparalleled in the hiftory of any nation. She has promifed, that, duiing her reign, no perfon fhall be punifhed with death, and the has kept her word.

She is the firt fovereign who ever fhewed fo much regard for the lives of mankind. By an inftitution, equally prudent and humane, malefactors are now condemned to ferve in the mines, and other public works; by which means their very punifhments prove of fervice to the fate. In other countries, they know only how to put a criminal to death, with all the apparatus of an executioner, without being able to prevent the perpetration of crimes. The terror of death makes, perhaps, lefs impreffion on thofe mifcreants, who are for the moft part bred up in idlenefs, than the fear of punifhment and hard labour, renewed every day.

To return to the fiege of $A$ foph, which place was now defended by the fame perion who had before directed the attacks againft it; the Ruflians, in vain, attempted to take it by ftorm; and after lofing a great number of men, were obliged to raife the fiege.

Perseverance in his undertakings, was the diftinguifhing character of Peter the Great. In the fpring of 1696 , he brought a ftill greater army before Afoph. About this time died Czar John, his brother, who, though he had not, while living, given the leaft difturbance to Peter's authority, having enjoyed only the bare title of Czar, yet he had been fome reftraint upon him in regard to appearances. The money, which had been applied to the fupport of John's houfhold, was now applied to the fupport of the army This proved a great help to a government, whofe revenues were not near fo. great as they are at prefent. Peter wrote to the

## 116 THE HISTORY

emperor Leopold, to the fates-general, and to the electo: of Brandenburg in order to obtain engineers, gunners, and feamen. He likewife took fome Calmucks into his pay, whofe light-horfe are very ufeful againft the Crim Tartars.

The moft agreeable of the Czar's fucceffes was that of his little fleet, which he faw with pleafure completed, and well commanded. It beat the Turkifh faicks, fent from Conftantinople, and took fome
torith
2 ch
dova
tion, i of them. The fiege was carried on regularly, but not altogether in our method; the trenches being three times deeper than ours, with parapets as high as ramparts. At length the garrifon furrendered the twenty eighth of July, N.S $\ddagger$ without being allowed the honour of war, and were obliged to deliver up the renegado Jacob to the befiegers.

The Czar immediately began to fortify Afoph, built frong forts to protect it, and made a harbour capable of holding large veffels, with a defign to make himfelf mafter of the Streights of Caffa, or the Cimmerian Bofphorus, which opens the entrance into the Euxine or Black Sea ; places famous in ancient times, by the naval armaments of Mithridates. He left thirty two armed faicks before A, foph $t$, and made all the neceffary preparations for fitting out a fleet againft the Turks, to confift of nine fixty gun thips, and of forty one, from thitty to fifty. He obliged his principal nobles, and the richer merchants, to contribute towards this armament; and thinking that the clergy ought to holp

## OFRUSSIA.

towards the common caufe, he obliged the patriarch, the bifhops, and the principal clergy, to pay down a fum of ready money to forward this expedition, in honour of their country, and the advantage of Chriftendom. The Coffacks were employed in building a number of thofe light boats in ufe amongit them, and which were excellent for the purpofe of cruizing on the coaft of Crim Tartary. The Ottoman empire was alarmed at this powerful armament ; the firft that had ever been attempted on the Mrotis. The Czar's defign was to drive the Turks and the Tartars for ever out of the Taurica Cherfonefus, and afterwards to eftablifh a free and eafy commerce with Perfia through Georgia. This is the very trade which the Greeks formerly carried on to Colchos, and to this peninfula of Crim Tartary, which Peter now feemed likely to fubdue.

Having fubdued the Turks and the Tartars, he was willing to accuftom his people to fplendid thews, as well as to military toil. He made his army to enter into Mofcow, under triumphal arches, in the midft of fuperb fire-works, and every thing that could add to the luftre of the fellival. The foldiers who had fought on board the Venetian faicks againft the Turks, and who were a diftinct corps of themfelves, marched firft. Marfhal Scheremetow, the generals Gordon and Schein, admiral Le Fort, and the other general officers, all took the precedence of the monarch in this proceflion, who declared he had no rank in the army, being defirous to convince the nobility, by his example, that merit was the only way to acquire military preferment.

## 118 THE HISTORY

This triumphal entry feemed fomewhat like to thofe of the apcient Romans, in which the conquerors ufed to expofe the prifoners they had taken, to public view, and fometimes put them to death: In like manner, the flaves, taken in this expedition, followed the army; and the deferter Jacob, who had betrayed them, was drawn in an open cart, in which was a gibbet, to which his body was faftened after he had been broke upon the wheel.

On this occafion was ftruck the firf medal in Ruffia, with this remarkable legend, in the language of the country, "Peter the First, au* guf emperor of Mofcovy." On the reverfe was the city of A foph, with thefe words: "Victorious by fire and water."

Peter was very fenfibly affected in the midt of all thefe fucceffes, that his fhps and galleys in the fea of Afoph, had been built entirely by fo. reigners; and wifhed as earneftly to have a harbour in the Baltic, as upon the Euxine Sea.

Accordingly, in the month of March 1617, he fent threefcore young Ruftians of Le Fort's regiment into Italy, moft of them to Venice, and the reft to Leghorn, to learn the naval art, and the manner of conftructing galleys. He likewife fent forty others into Holland $\ddagger$, to learn the method of building and working large thips; and others likewife into Germany, to ferve in the land forces, and be inftructed in the military difcipline of that

[^10]
## OFRUSSIA.

nation. At length he took a refolution to abfent himfelf for a few years from his own dominions, in order to learn how to govern them the better. He had a ftrong defire to improve himfelf by his own ob ervation and practice in the knowledge of naval affairs, and of the feveral arts which he was fo defirous to eftablifh in his own country. He propofed to travel incognito through Denmark, Brandenburg, Holland, Vienna, Venice and Rome. France and Spain were the only countries he did not take into his plan; Spain, becaufe the arts he was in queft of were too much neglected there; and France, becaufe in that kingdom they reigned with too much offentation, and that the parade and flate of Lewis XIV. which had difgufted fo many crowned heads, ill agreed with the private manner in which he propofed to travel. Moreover, he was in alliance with moft of the powers, whofe dominions he intended to vifit, except thole of France and Rome. He likewife remembered, with refentment, the little refpect Nhewn by Lewis XIV. to his embafly in 1687 , which had proved more famous than fuccefsful: and laftly, he already efpoufed the عaufe of Auguftus, elector of Saxony, with whom the prince of Conti had lately entered into a competition for the crown of Poland.

## CHAP.


years of age thould abandon his kingdom, for to learn the art of government. His victory over the Turks and Tartars, the luftre of his triumphant entry into Mofcow, the number of foreign troops attached to his fervice, the death of John his brother, and the confinement of the princels Sophia in a cloifter, and above all, the general refpect thewn to his perfon, feemed to affure him the tranquillity of his ftates during his abfence. He entrufted the regency with the boyar Strechnef, and the knez or prince Romadonow fki, who were to deliberate with the reft of the boyars in affairs of importance.

THE troons formed by general Gordon remained at Mofcow, to maintain every thing quiet in that capital. Thofe Strelitzes, who were thought likely to create a difturbance, were diftributed on the frontiers of Crim Tartary, to preferve the conqueft of Afoph, and to fupprefs the incurfions of the Tartars. Having thus provided againft every incident, he gave a free fcope to his paffion of travelling and improving himfelf.

This journey having been the occafion or pretence of the bloody war, which fo long traverfed, but in the end feconded, all the defigns of the Czar; which dethroned Augultus king of Puland, and beflowed a crown on king Staniflaus, and then took it from him; which made Charles XII. king of Sweden the firft of conquerors for nine years, and the moft unfortunate of kings for nine more; it is neceffary to enter into a detail of thefe events, and to reprefent in what fituation Europe was at that time.

Sultan

Sultan Muftapha II. was feated on the Ottoman throne; the weaknefs of whofe adminiffration would not permit him to make any great efforts, either againft Leopold, emperor of Germany, whofe arms were fuccefsful in Hungary; or againtt the Czar, who had lately taken Afoph from him, and threatened to make himfelf mafter of the Euxine fea; nor even againft the Venetians, who had porfeffed themfelves of all the Peloponnefus.

John Sobiefki, king of Poland, immortalized by the victory of Chockfim, and the deliverance of Vienna, died the feventeenth of June $10 y 0$, and the poffeffion of that crown was afterwards difputed by Auguftus elector of Saxony, who obtained it, and Armand prince of Conti, who had only the honour of being elected.

SWEDEN had lately loft, but did not lament, Charles XI. her fovereign *, who was the firft king who had ever been really abfolute in that country, and who was the father of a prince ftill more fo, though it was abolifhed after his death. He left the crown to his fon Charles XII. then only fifteen years of age. This was in all appearance a conjuncture the moft favourable for the Czai's grand defign of enlarging his dominions on the gulph of Finland, and on the fide of Livonia. But he did not think it enough to harrafs the Turks on the Black Sea; the fertlements on the Palus Mrotis, and the borders of the Calpian Cea, were not fufficient to anfwer his projects of navigation, com-

- April 1097.
merce and power. Befides, glorv, being the darling object of this reformer, was to be found neither in Perlia nor in Turky, but in our parts of Europe, where great abilities and noble atchievements are rendered immortal. In fine, Peter did notaim at introducing either the Perfian or Turkifh manners among his fubjects, but thofe of England, Germany, and Holland.

Germany then at war both with the Turks and with the trench, and united with Spain, England, and Holland, againit the fingle power of Lewis XIV. was on the point of concluding a peace; and the plenipotentiaries were already met at the cafte of Ryfwick, in the neighbourhood of the Hague.

Affairs were in this fituation when Peter and his a mbaffadors began their journey in the month of A pril 1097, by the road of great Novogorod: from thence they journejed through Efthonia and Livonia, provinces formerly difputed by the Ruflians, Swedes, and Poles, and which the Swedes at laft conquered.

Ihe fertility of Livonia, and the fituation of Riga, its capital, were fufficient temptations to the Czar, to poffers himfelf of that country. He was defirous to fee the fortifications of the citadel But count D'Alberg, governor of Riga, taking umbrage at this requeft, refufed to fatisfy his curiofity, and treated the embafly with contempt. This behaviour only heightened the inclination the Czar had, to make himfelf matter of thofe provinces.

Fком Livonia they proceeded to Brandenburg Pruffia, part of which had been inhabited by the Vol. 'I.

G
ancient

## 124 THE HISTORY

ancient Vandals; Polifh Pruffia had been in eluded in European Salmatia. Brandenburg Pruffia was a poor country, and ill peopled; yet its elector, who afterwards took the name of king, difplayed a magnificence on this occafion, a thing before unknown, and which he could ill aftord He piqued himfelf up $n$ receiving this embafly in his city of Konigfberg, with royal magnificence. The mof fumptuous prefents were made on both fides. The contratt between the French drefs, which the court of Berlin affected, and the long Afratic robes of the Ruffans, with their caps buttoned up with pearls and ciamonds, and their fcimitars hanging at their fides, produced a fingular effeel. The Czar was dreffed after the German faftion. The prince of Georgia, who accompanied him; was clad in a Per. fian habit, which difplayed a different magnificence. This prince was taken prifoner afterwards at the batele of Narva.

PETER defpifed all this external pomp; it would have been happy for him, that he had thewn an equal contempt for the pleafures of the table, in which the Germans, at that time, placed their whole delight. It was at one of thefe entertainments $t$, then too much in vogue, and which are alike deftructive to bealth and morality, that he -drew his fword upon his favourite Le Fort; but exprefled as much forrow for this fudden fally of foflion, as Alexander did for the murder of Cly.

## OFRUSSIA.

tus. He afked pardon of Le Fort, faying, that he wanted to reform his fubjects, but could nos yet reform himfelf. Genetal Le Fort, in his manufcript, praifes the Czar more for his goodnefs of heart, than he blames him for his excefs of paffion.

THE ambaffadors then travelled through Pomerania and Berlin; and from thence, one part took its way through Magdeburg, and the other by Hamburg, a city confiderable for "its extenfive commerce, but not fo rich and populous as it has become fince. From thence they directed their route towards Minden, paffed through Weftphalia, and at length, by the way of Cleves, arrived at Amflerdam.

THE Czar arrived at this city fifteen days before the ambaffadors. At his fifft coming, he lodged in a houfe belonging to the Eaft India company; but foon afterwards, chofe a fmall apartment in the dock-yard, belonging to the admiralty. He clothed hinfelf in the habit of a Dutch fkipper, and in that drefs went to the village of Saardam, a pl ce where at that time, a great many nore fhips were built than at prefent. Ihis village is as great, as populous, as rich, and much neater, than many opulent cities. The Czar greatly admired the mulcitude of men who were conftantly employed there, the order and exatitnefs of their labours, the prodgious celerity with which they built and fitted out fhips, and the incredible quan. tity of magazines and machines for the greater eafe and feeurity of labour. The Czar began with pur-

## 126 THE HISTORY

chafing a boat, to which he made a maft himfelf; after that, he worked upon all the different parts in the conftiuction of a veffel, being clothed and fed in the fame manner as the meaneft workmen, working in the forges, the rope yards, and in feveral mills, which abound in prodigious numbers in that village, for fawing timber, extracting oil, making paper, and wire-drawing. He cauled himfelf to be inrolled in the lift of carpenters, by the name of Peter Michaelhoff, and was commonly called Peter Bas, or Mafter Peter: the workmen were at firft afhamed at having a crowned head for a fellow-labourer, but foon became familiarifed to the fight.

While he was thus handling the compals and the ax at Saardam, a confirmation was brought him of the divifion in Poland, and of the double nomination of the elector Auguftus, and the prince of Conti. The carpenter of Saardam immediatedly promifed king Auguftus to affift him with thirty thoufand men, and from his work-loft iffued out orders to his army that was affembled in the Ukraine againtt the Turks.

His troops were viCtorious over the Tartars near Aloph $t$, and a few months afterwards took from them the city of ur, or Orkapi, which we call Precop He ftill continued improving in different arts : he went frequently from Saardam to Amfterdam, to hear the lectures of the celebrated anatomift Ruyich, and made himfelf mafter of feveral
operations in furgery, which might render himfelf ufeful both to himfelf and his officers He went through a courfe of natural philofophy, in the houfe of the Burgo-mafter Witzen, celebrated for his patriotic virtue, and the noble ufe he made of his immenfe fortune, which he employed like a common friend to mankind, fending men of abilities, at a great expence, to all parts of the globe, in fearch of whatever was curious and valuable, and fitting out veffels at his own expence, to difcover new countries.

Peter Bas had fufpended his labours for a fhort time, to pay a private vifit at Utrecht, and at the Hague, to William King of England, and fadtholder of the united provinces. General Le Fort was the only perfon admitted to the private conference of the two monarchs. Peter affited afterwards at the public entry of his ambaffadors, and at their audience: they prefented in his name to the deputy of the fates fix hundred of the moft beautiful fables that could be procured; and the ftates, over and above the cuftomary prefents on thefe occafions, of a gold chain and medal, gave them three mag. nificent coaches. They received the firft vifits of all the plenipotentiaries who were at the congrefs of Ryfwick, excepting thofe of France, to whom they had not notified their arrival, not only becaufe the Czar efpoufed the caufe of Augultus againt the prince of Conti, but alfo becaufe king William, whofe friendihip he was fond of cultivating, was averfe to a peace with France.

AI his return to Amfterdam, he refumed his
former labours, and finifhed with his own hands a fhip of fixty guns, that he had begun himfelf, and fent ber to Archangel, which was the only port he had at that time on the ocean.

He not only engaged in his fervice feveral French refugees, Swifs and Germans; but he alfo fent all forts of artifts over to Mofcow, and he previoufly made a trial of their feveral abilities himfclf. There are few trades or arts which he did not perfectly underftand: he took a particular pleafure in correcting geographical maps, the authors of which had but a flight knowledge of his dominions, and frequently fixed the fituation of towers, and the courfe of rivers, without a proper knowledge of them. There is flill preferved a map, on which he marked out, with his own hand, his projected communication of the Cafpian and Black feas, the execution of which he had given in charge to Mr Brekel, a German engineer. The junction of thofe two feas was indeed a lefs arducus enterprife than that of the ocean and Mediterranean, which was executed in France; but the very idea of joining the fea of A foph with the Cafpian, aftonithed the imagination at that time; but new eftablifhments in that country became the object of his attention, in proportion as his fucceffes begat new hopes.

His troops, commanded by general Shein, and prince Dolgorowfki, had lately gained a victory 0 . ver the Iartars near Afoph, and likewife over a body of Janizaries fent by fultan. Muftapha to their affitance.
affifance $\ddagger$. This fuccefs made him niore refpect. ed, even by thofe who blamed him for quitting his dominions, to turn workman at Amflerdam. They now faw that the weighty affairs of the monaych did not fuffer by the labours of the philofopher, the traveller, and the artift.

He continued at Amfterdam, employ'd in his ufual occupations of fhip-building, engineering, geography, and the practice of natural philofophy, till the middle of January $=693$, when he fet cut for England, but fill as one of the retinue of his ambaffadors.

King William fent his own yache to meet him, and two fhips of war as convoy. In England he obferved the fame way of living as at Amferdam and Saardam; he took an apartment near the king's dock-yard at Deptford, where he applied his time wholly to gain farther inftruction. The Dutch builders had only taught him the practical part of fhip-building. In England, he found the art better explained; for there they work according to mathematical proportion. He foon made himfelf maf ter of the theory, and was able to give leflons to others. He began to build a Chip according to the Englifh method of conflruation, and it proved an excellent failor. The art of warch-making, which was brought to perfection in London, next drew bis attention, and be made bimfelf compleat mafter of the whole theory apon which the principles of watch-making is founded : captain Perry,
$\ddagger$ July, 1698.
G 4

## 130 THE HISTORY

the engineer who followed him from London to Ruffia, affirms, that from the cafting of cannon, to the fpinning of ropes, there was not one branch of trade belonging to a fhip that he did not minute. ly underftand, and even put his hand to, as often as he came into the places where thofe trades were carried on.

In order to cultivate his friendmip, king William allowed him to engage feveral Englifh artif. cers into his fervice, as he had done in Holland; but befides artificers, he engaged likewife fome mathematicians, whom he could not fo eafily procure in Holland. One Fergufon, a Scotchman, an excellent geometrician, entered into his fervice, and was the firft perfon who brought arithmetic into ufe in the exchequer in Ruffia, where, before that time, they made ufe only of the Tartarian method of reckoning, with balls ftrung upon a wire: a method which fupplied the place of writing, but was very peiplexing and imperfect, becaufe, after the calculation, there was no method of proving it, in order to difcover if there was any miltake. The Indian cyphers, which are now in ufe, were not introduced amongtt us till the ninth century, by the Arabians; and they were not received into the Ruffian empire, till many centuries afterwards. This has been the fate of the arts, to make their progrefs flowly round the globe. He took with him two young ftudents from a mathematical fchool, and this was the beginning of the marine academy, founded afterwards by Peter the Great. He oblerved and calculated eclipfes with Fergufon.

## OFRUSSIA.

Fergufon. Perry the engineer, though greatly diffatisfied, not being fufficiently rewarded, acknowledges, that Perer made himfelf a proficient in aftronomy; that he perfectily-weil underfood the motions of the heavenly bodies, and alfo the laws of gravitation, by which they are directed. This force, now fo evidently demonftrated, and before the time of the great Newton fo little known, by which all the planets gravitate to wards each other, and which retained them in their orbits, was already familiar to a fovereign of Ruffia, while other nations amufed themfelves with chimerical vortexes, and in the country of Galileo, ignorant people were appointed to inftruct others a ignorant, to believe the earth to be immoveable.

Perry fet out in order to effect a junction of rivers, to build bridges, and conttruct fluices. The Czar's plan was to open a communication by canals between. the ocean, the Calpian, and the Black Sea.

It ought not to be forgotten, that a company of Engifh merchant, with the marquis of Carmarthen at their head, yave Peter fifteen thoufand pounds for the permiffion of lelling tobacco in Ruffia. The pastiarch, by a miftaken feveritv, had forb:d this branch of trate; for the Ruffian church forbid fmoaking, as an unclean and finful action. Peter, who knew better things, and who, amongft his other projects, meditated a reformation of the church, made this a pretext for trading into his dominions.

## 132 THE HISTORY

Before Peter left England, he was entertained by king William with a flew worthy fuch a gueft: this was a mock fea fight. Little was it then imagined, that the Czar would one day fight real battles on this element againft the $S$ wedes, and obtain victories in the Baltic. King William made him a prefent of the veffel in which he ufed to go over to Holland, called the Reyal Tranfport, a beautiful yacht, and magnificently adorned. In this yacht Peter failed to Holland the latter end of 16 g 8 , taking with him three captains of Thips of war, five and twenty captains of merchant fhips, forty lieutenants, thirty pilots, thirty furgeons, two hundred and fifty gunners, and upwards of three hundred artificers. This little colony of ingenious perfons in all branches, failed from Hulland to Archangel, on board the Royal Tranfport, and from shence were fint into all the different places where their fervices were neceflary. Thofe who had been engaged at Amfterdam, went by the way of Narva, which then belonged to the Swedes.

While Peter was thus tranfplanting the arts and manufactures of England and Holland into his own country, the officers, whom he bad fent to Rome, and other places in Italy, had likewife engaged feveral artifls in his fervice. General Scheremetow, who was at the head of his embaliy to Italy, took the tour of Rome, Aaples, Venice, aud Malta, while the Czar joumered to Vienna with his other ambaffadors. He wanted only to view the military dicipline of the Germans, after having
having feen the Englifh fleets and the dock-yards of Holland. Political reafons, as well as improvements, drew the Czar here. The emperor was his natural ally againft the Turks. Peter had a private audience of leopold, and the two monarchs conferred ftanding, to avoid the trouble of ceremony.

There happened nothing remarkable during his flay at Vienna, except the celebration of the ancient feaft of Landlord andr Landlady, which had been difufed for a confiderable time, and which Leopold thought proper to revive upon the Czar's account, Ithis feaft, which the Germans call Wircfchaf, is celebrated in the following manner:

The emperor is landlord and the emprefs landlady; the king of the Romans, the archdukes and the archducheffes are generally their aflifants : they entertain people of all nations as their guefts, who come dreft after the moft ancient fafhion of their refpective countries: thofe who are invited to the feaft draw lots for tickets, on each of which is writitn the name of the nation, and the character of the perfon they are to reprefent. One perhaps draws a-ticket for a Chinefe mandarin; anotberifor a Fartarian Mirza; a thid a Perfian fatrap; and a fourth for a Roman fenator; and a princefs may, by her ticket, be a gardener's wile, or a milk-maid; a prince may act a peafant, or a common foldier. They have dances fuitable to all thefe characters, and the landlord and the landlady, with the family, wait at the table. Such was the ancient in-

## 134 THE HISTORY

ftitution; but on this occafion $\ddagger$ Jofeph king of the R mans, and the countefs of Iraun, reprefented the ancient gyptians. The archduke Charles, and the countefs of $W$ altein, were dreffed like the Flemings in the time of Charles the fifth. The aichducheis Mary-Elizabeth, and count Traun, were in the habits of Tartars; the archduchefs Jolephina, and the count of Workflaw, were habited like Peifians; and the archduchefs Mariamne, and prince Maximilian of Hanover, in the character of North Holland peafants. Peter appeared in the drefs of a Friefland boor, and all who fpoke to him addreffed him in that character, at the fame time talking to him of the great Czar of Mufcovy. Thefe are very trifing particulars: but whatever revives the remembrance of ancient manners and cuftoms, is in fome meafure worthy of being recorded.

The Czar was ready to fet out from Vienna, in order to proceed to Venice, to compleat his tour of inftruction, when he received the news of a rebellion, which had lately broke out in his dominions.

I Le Fort's MSS, and thofe of Peterfburg.

CHAP.

#  

$$
\text { C H A P. } \mathrm{X} \text {. }
$$

AConspiractpunished.
The Strelitzes abolijbed. Changes in cufooms, manners, fate, and church.

1ETER, when he fet out on bis travels, had provided againft every accident that might happen, even that of a rebellion. But all the toils and fatigues he had underwent to aggrandize his country, proved the caufe of this prefent revolt.

Some boyars, who had a great regard for the ancient cuftoms, and fome priefts, to whom the new cultoms appeared little better than facrilege, began thefe diffurbances; upon this the old friends of the princefs Sophia took this opportunity to thew themfelves. One of her fifters, who was fhut up in the fame monaftery, contributed chiefly to excite thefe fecitions. It was reprefented by all fides, that the nation was in the utmoft danger from the introduction of foreigners to improve it. In fine, who would believe, that the $\dagger$ permifion which the Czar had given to import tobacco into his empire, contrary to the inclination of the clergy , was one of the flrongeft motives to rebellion?

[^11]Superftition,

Superfition, the fcourge of every country, and yet the delight of the multitud, fpread iffelf from the common people to the Strelitzes, who had been fcattered on the frontiers of Lithuania: they af fembled in a body, and marched towards Mof. cow, with the intent to place the princefs Sophia on the throne, and for ever to prevent the return of a Czar who had violated the eftablifhed cuftoms of his country, by prefuming to travel for infruction among foreigners. The forces commanded by Schein and Gordon, who were much better difciplined than the Strelitzes, met with them fifreen leagues from Mofcow, gave them battle, and entirely defeated them: but this advantage gained by a foreign general over the ancient militia, among whom were feveral of the burghers of Mofcow, contributed fill more to inflame the people.

To quell thefe tumults, the Czar fets out privately from Vienna, paffes through Poland, has a private interview with Auguflus, concerts meafures with that prince for extending the Ruflian dominions on the fide of the Baltic, and at length arrived at Mofcow, where he furpriled them all with his prefence $t$ : he then confers rewards on the troops who had routed the Strelitzes, of whom the prifons were now full. If their crimes were great, their punithment was as grear. Their chies, with feveral of sheir officers and priefts, weie condemned to death; fome were broke

[^12]upon the wheel $\dagger$, and two women were buried alive; upwards of two thoufand of the Strelitzes were hanged, part of whom were hung round abrut the walls of the city, and others put to death in different manners, and their dead bodies remained expofed for two days in the high roads, particularly about the monaftery where the princeffes Sophia and Eudocia refided $\ddagger$. Monuments of fone were erected, on which their crimes and punifments were engraven. A great number of them who had wives and children at Mofcow, were difperfed with their families into Siberia, to the kingdom of Aftracan, and the country of Afoph. Their punifhment was ufeful to the fate, as they helped to cultivate and people a large tract of land, which wanted inhabitants and improvement

Perhaps, if the Czar tiad not feen it abfolutely neceflary to make fuch dreadful examples, he might have employed part of thefe Strelitzes, whom he put to death, upon the public works; whereas they were now loft both to him and the flate: the lives of men ought to be held in great eftimation, efpecially in a country where the encreafe of inhabitants ought to have been the principal care of the lovereign ; but he thought it neceflary to terrify and fubdue the fpirit of the nation by executions and the parade attending them. The entire

[^13]corps of the Strelitzes, whofe number not one of his predeceffors had even dared to think of reducing, was broke for ever, and their very name abolifhed. This revolt was effected without any refiftance, becaufe matters had been properly prepa.
that indtat red beforehand. The Turkifh fultan, Ufman, as I have aiready remarked, was depofed and ftrangled in the fame century, only for giving the Janizaries room to fufpect that he intended to reduce their number. Peter had better fuccefs, becaufe his meafures were better concerted.

Of this powerful and numerous body of the Strelitzes, he left only fome weak regiments, from whom there could no longer be any danger; and yet thefe, fill retaining their old fpirit of mutiny, revolted again in Aftracan, in the year 170 , but were foon quelled.

But Peter's humanity was equal to his feverity: this he thewed fome time afterwards, when he loft his favourite Le Fort, who was fnatched away by an untimely fate $\ddagger$, at the age of forty fix He honoured him with a funeral pomp equal to the greateft fovereigns, and affited himfelf in the proceffion, carrying a pike in his hand, and marching a ter the caprains, in the rank of a lieutenant, which he held in the deceafed general's regiment, hereby fetting an example to his nobles, of the refpect due to merit and the military rank.

After the death of Le Fort, it appeared plainly, that the changes in the ftate were not owing to that
that general, but to the Czar himfelf. Peter bad indeed been confirmed in his defign, by his feveral converfations with Le Fort; but had planned and executed them all without his aid or affitance.

As foon as he had fuppreffed the Strelitzes, he formed regular regiments on the German model, who were all clothed in a fhort uniform, inftead of thofe long and troublefome coats, which they ufed to wear before; and, at the fame time, they were taught a regular exercife.

The regiment of Preobrazinfki guards were already formed; it had taken its name from the firft company of fifty men, whom the Czar had trained up in his younger days in his retreat at Preobrazinfki, at the time when his fifter Sophia governed the ftate, and the other regiment of guards was alfo eftablifhed.

As he had paffed through the loweft degrees in the army, he ordered that the fons of his boyars and knezes thould ferve as common foldiers before they were made officers. He fent fome of the young nobility on board his fleet at Weronitz and Afoph, where he obliged them to ferve their apprenticefhip as common feamen. No perfon durit refufe to obey the commands of a mafter, who had fet the example himfelf. The Englifh and Dutch he had brought over with him were employed in equipping this fleet for fea, in conftructing fluices, and building docks for careening the Chips, and to refume the great work of joining the Don and the Volga, which had been given over by Brekel the German. And now he began to reform the coun-
cil of fate, the revenue, the church, and even fociety itfelf.

THE revenue had been bitherto tranfacted much in the fame manner as in Furky. Each boyar paid a flipulated fum for his lands, which he raifed upon his vaffals; the Czar appointed certain burghers and burgomafters, to be his receivers, who were too weak to claim the right of paying only fuch fums as they thought proper, into the public trea. fury. This new adminiltration of the revenue coft him the moft trouble: he was obliged to try feveral fchemes before he could fix upon a proper one.

- THE reformation of the church, which in all $0^{\circ}$ ther countries is looked upon as a dangerous and difficult tafk, proved eafy to him. The patriarchs had at times oppofed the authority of the crown, as well as the Strelitzes; Nicon with infolence, Joachin, one of his fucceffors, with cunning and fubtilty.

The bimops had atrogated the power of life and death; a prorogative directly contrary to the firit of religion, and the fubordination of government. This affumed power, though of long flanding, was now taken from them. The patriarch Adrian dy: ing at the clofe of this century, Peter declared that there foould never be any other.
1 THis dignity then was entirely abolifhed, and the great revenues thereto was annesed to the public revenue, which food in need of this addition. Attbough the Czar did not fet himfelf up at the head of the Rullian church, as the kings of Great

Britain have done in regard to the church of England; yet he made himfelf abfolute mafter of the clergy, becaufe the fynods did not dare either to difobey the commands of a defpotic fovereign, or to difpute with a prince who had more knowledge than themfelves.

We need only caft an eye on the preamble to the edict, concerning the ecclefiaftical regulations, iffued in 1721 , to be convinced that he was at once mafter and legiflator: "We fhould deem ourfelves guilty of ingratitude to the Moft High, if, after having reformed the military and civil orders, we neglect d the fpiritual, \&c. For this caufe, following the example of the molt ancient kings, who have bieen famed for piety, we have taken upon us to make certain wholefome regulations for the clergy." It is true, he appointed a fynod for carrying into execution his laws : but the members of this fynod, at entering upon their office, were to take the oath, the form of which had been drawn up and figned by himfelfiti This was an oath of fubmiffion and obedience, and was couched in the following terms: "I fwear to be ar faithful and 0 . bedient fervant and fubject to my natural and true fovereign, and to the augult fucceffors whom it thail pleafe him to name, in virtue of the inconteltable power of which he is poffeffed: I acknowledge that he is the fupreme judge of this fpiritual college: 1 fwear by God, who fees all things; that 1 underftand and mean this oath in the full torce and fenfe, which the words prefent to thofe who read or hear it." This oath is ftill ftronger than
that of fupremacy in England. The Ruffian moo narch was not, indeed, one of the fathers of the fynod, but he dictated their laws; he did not touch the cenfer, but he directed the hands that bore it.

He thought, and was fully perfuaded, that in a
bels ftate like his, which flood in need of population, the celibacy of the monks was repugnant to nature, and to the public good. It was the ancient cuftom of the Ruffian church, for fecular priefts to marry at leaft once; they were even obliged to do fo: and formerly, as foon as their wives died they ceafed to be priefts. But that a multitude of young people of both fexes fhould make a vow of living ufelefs in a cloilter, and without connection with one another, at the expence of the publick, appeared to him to be of dangerous confequence. He therefore ordered, that no one fhould be admitted to a monaftic life, till they were fifty years old, a time of life very rarely fubject to a temptation of this kind; and he forbid any perfon to be admitted, of what age foever, who was invefted with any public employment.

This regulation has been abolifhed fince his death, becaufe the government has thought proper to fhew more complaifance to the monafteries: but the patriarchal dignity has never been re-eftablifho ed, and its revenues are now applied to the pay* ment of the troops.

These changes at firf excited fome murmurings. A prieft wrote to prove that Peter was ansichrif, becaufe he would have no patriarch; and the art of printing was made ufe of to publith li-

## OFRUSSIA.

bels againft him: but on the other hand, there was another prieft who flarted up, to prove that Peter could not be antichrift, becaufe the number fix hundred and fixty fix was not found in his name, and that he har not the fign of the Beaft. All thofe complaints however were foon filenced Peter, in fact, gave much more to the church than he took from it; for by degrees, he made the clergy wifer, and more regular. He founded three colleges at Mofcow, where they teach the learned languages, and where thofe who are defigned for the miniftry are obliged to ftudy.

One of the moft neceffary reformations was the abolition, or at lealt the mitigation of the three Lents, an ancient fuperftition of the Greek church, and prejudicial to thofe who are employed in the public works, and more efpecially to foldiers, as was the ancient Jewifh fuperftition of not fighting on the fabbath day. Accordingly the Czar abfolved his workmen and foldiers from obferving thefe Lents, in which, though they were not permitted to eat, it was cuftomary to get drunk. He alfo dipenfed with their obfervance of faft days: the chaplains of the fleet and army were obliged to fet the example, which they did without much reluctance.

THE calendar was an object of importance. The regulation of the year was formerly made by the heads of the clergy, on account of their knowledge in aftronomy, as well as fettling the particular feftivals.

THE year began on the firf of September among the

## THE HISTORY

the Ruffians. Peter ordered, that henceforth it fhould commence the firft day of January, as in the other nations of Europe. This change was appointed to take place in the year 1700 , at the be. ginning of the century, which he ordered to be celebrated by a jubilee, and feveral grand folemnities. It was a matter of furprize to the populace, how the Czar fhould be able to change the courfe of the fun Some obflinate people, perfuaded that God bad made the world in September, continued their ancient ftyle: but the alteration took place in all the public offices, in the court of chancery, and in a fhort time throughout all the em. pire. Peter did not adopt the Gregorian calendar, which Englifh mathematicians rej-cted; and which muft, neverthelefs, be one day received in every country.

Ever fince the fifth century, the time when letters were firf introduced amongft them, they had been accuftomed to write upon long rolls, made either of the bark of trees, or of parchment, and afterwards of paper; and the Czar was obliged to publifh an edict, ordering every one, for the future, to write after the manner we do.

The reformation now was eftablifhed every where. I heir marriages were made formerly after the fane manner as in Turky and Perfia, where the bridegroom does not fee his bride till the con* the ct is figned, and they can no longer fly from their words. This cuflom may do very well amongft thofe people where polygamy plevails, and where the women are always fhut up; but it is a

## OF RUSSIA.

very bad one in countries where a man is tied to one wife, and where divorces are feldom allowed.

The Czar wanted to accuftom his people to the manners and cuftoms of the nations which he had feen in his travels, and from whence be had taken the mafters who were now inftructing them.

It was proper, that the Ruffians fhould not be clothed in a different manner from thofe who were teaching them the arts; becaule the hatred to ftra gers, which is but too natural to mankind, is not a little kept up by a difference of drefs. The full drefs, which at that time partook of the fafhions of the Poles, the Tartars, and the ancient Hungarians, was, as we have elfewhere obferved, very noble; but the drefs worn by the burghers and common people refembled thofe jackets plaited round the wailt, which are fill given to the poor, in fome of the French hofpitals. For the moft part, the robe was generally the drefs of all nations, as being a garment that required the leaft trouble and art; and for this reafon, the beard was fuffered to grow. The Czar had but little difficulty in introducing our mode of drefs, and the cuftom of thaving among his courtiers; but the people were more difficult, and he found himelf obliged to lay a tax on long coats and beards. Patterns of coats were hung up in public places; and whoever refufed to pay the tax, were obliged to fuffer their robes, and their beards, to be flortened. All this was done in a jocular manner, and this air of pleafautry prevented rebelions.

It has ever been the defiga of all wife legilla-

## 146 THE HISTORY

tors, to render mankind more fociable; but it is nor fufficient to accomplifh this end, that they live together in towns; there mutt be a mutual intercourfe of civility. This intercourfe fweetens all the bitternefs of life. The Czar, therefore, introduced thefe affemblies, which the Italians call ri. dotti To thefe affemblies he invited all the ladies of the court, with their daughters, and they were to appear dreffed after the fafhions of the fouthern nations of Europe He was himfelf at the pains of drawing up rules of decorum to be obferved at thefe focial entertainments. Thus even to good manners among his iubjects, was his own work, and which time accomplifhes.

To make bis people better pleafed with thefe in. novations, he abolithed the word golut, glave, always made ufe of by the Ruffians when they addreffed their Czar, or prefented any petition to him; and ordered, that, for the future, they fhould make uie of the word raab, which fignifies fubject. This alteration did not diminifh the obedience due to the fovereign, and yet was the moft likely means of conciliating their affections. Every month was productive of fome new change or inftitution. He carried his attention even to the ordering pofts to be fet up in the road betwixt Mofcow and Woronitz, to ferve as mile-fones at the diffance of every verlt, that is to fay, every feven hundred paces; and had a kind of caravanferas, or public inns, built at the end of every twentieth verft.

While he was thus extending his concerns for the common people, the merchants, and the travel-

## O. F RUSSIA.

Ier, he refolved to make an addition to the brilliancy of his own court. For though he was an ene. my to pomp or fhew in his own perfon, he thought it neceffary in thofe about him. For this purpofe he inflituted the order of St. Andrew + , in imitation of the feveral orders with which all the courts of Europe abound. Golowin, fuccefior to Le Fort in the dignity of high admiral, was the firft knight of this order. It was efteemed an high reward, to have the honour of being admitted a member. It was a kind of badge that entitled the perfon who bore it to the veneration of the publick. This mark of honour cofts nothing to the fovereign, and flatters the felf-love of a fubject, without giving him any additional power.

So many ufeful innovations were received with applaufe by the wifeft part of the nation; and the murmurings and complaints of thofe who had adhered to the ancient cuftoms, were flenced by the acclamations of men of found judgment.

While Peter was thus making a new creation in the interior part of his flate, he concluded an advantageous truce with the Turks, which allowed him the liberty to extend his territories on another fide. Muftapha the Second, who bad been defeated by prince Eugene, at the battle of Zenta in 1697, Atripped of the Morea by the Venetians, and unable to defend Afoph, was obliged to make peace with his victorious enemies; this peace was concluded at Carlowitz, between Peterwaradin and Sa -

Vol. I.
H
lankamen,

[^14]
## 148 THE HISTORY

ankamen, places now famous by his defeats *. Temafwaer was made the boundary of the German and Uttoman dominions. Kaminiek was reftored to the Poles ; the Morea, and fome towns in Dalmatia, which had been caken by the Venetians, remained in their hands for fome time; and Peter the Firft continued in poffeffion of A foph, and of a few forts raifed in its neighbourhood.

It was impoflible for the Czar to extend his dominions on the fide of Turky, as the forces of that empire would be united againft him, which were formerly divided. His naval projects were 100 large for the Palus Mrotis, and the fettlements on the Cafpian Sea would not admit of a flect of men of war: : he therefore turned his views towards the Baltic Sea, but without relinquilhing the navigation of the lanais and Wolga.


## C H A P. XI.

War with Sweden.
The Battle of Narva.

NOW a grand fcene was opened on the fron. tiers of Sweden $\ddagger$. One of the principal of all the resolutions which happened from caules of all the revolutions which happened from
Ingria, as far as Drefden, and which laid fo many countries

## OFRUSSIA.

countries wafte for the fpace of eighteen years, was the abufe of the fupreme power under Charles XI. king of Sweden, father of Cbarles XiI. This fact cannot be too often repeated, as it concerns every crowned head, and the fuhjects of every nation. Almoft all Livonia, with the whole of Eftonia, had been abandoned by Poland to Cbarles XI. king of Sweden, who fucceeded Charles X. precifely at the time of the treaty of Uliva. It was ceded, as is the cuftom, with a refervation of rights and privileges. Charles XI having little regard to them, John Renold Patkul, a Livonian gentleman, came to Stockholm in $16 \mathrm{~g}_{2}$, at the head of fix deputies of the province, and laid their complaints at the foot of the throne, in refpectful, but ftrong terms $\dagger$. Inftead of an anfwer, the fix deputies were imprifoned, and Patkui was condemned to lofe both his honour and his life. But he loft neither, for he made bis efcape to the countiy of Vaud in Switzerland, where he remained fome time. When he afterwards was informed, that Auguftus, elector of Saxony, had promited at his acceffion to the throne of Poland, to recover the provinces that had been wrelted from that kingdom ; he went to Drefden, to thew that prince how eafily he might make himfelf malter of Livonia, and rêvenge himfelf upon a $\mathrm{H}_{2}$ king,
$\dagger$ Norberg, chaplain and confeffor to Charles XIf. fays in his hiftory, "That he had the infolence to complain of opp cfions, and that "he was condemned to lofe his honour and life." This is fpeaking like the prieft of defpotimm He thould have obferved, that no one can deprive a citizen of his honour, for doing his duty,
king, only feventeen years of age, for the loffes that Poland had fuftained by his anceftors.

At the ame time Peter was enploying his thoughts on feizing Ingria and Carelia. Thefe provinces had formerly belonged to the Ruffians, but the Swedes had made themfelves mafters of them by force of arms, in the time of the falfe Demetrius's, and had kept the poffiffion of them by treaties: another war and new treaties might reftore them a. gain to Ruffia. Patkul went from Drefden to Mofcow, and having firred up the two monarchs to avenge his caufe, he cemented a clofe union between them, and haftened their preparations for invading all the places fituated to the eaft and fouth of Fin. land.

A T this time alfo, the new king of Denmark, Frederic IV entered into an alliance with the Czar and the king of Poland, againft Charles, the young king of Siveden, who feemed not able to withftand thein united forces. Patkul had the fatisfaction of befreging the Swedes in Riga, the capital of Livonia, and commanding as a major-general.

The Czar marched near fixty thoufand men into Ingria. It is true, that, in this great army, he had no more than twelve thoufand regular foldiers, being thote he had difc̈plined himfelf; namely, the two regiments of guards, and fome few others, the relt being a badly armed militia, with fome Coffacks, and Circaffian Tartars; but he carried with him one hundred and forcy-five pieces of cannon. He laid fiege to Narva, a fmall town in Ingria, that
had a very commodious harbour, and it was generally thought the place would be foon taken.

All Europe know *, how Charles XII. when not quite eighteen years of age, withfood all his enemies, and attacked them one after another. He entered Denmark, put an end to the war in that kingdom in lefs than fix weeks, fent reinforcements to Riga, obliged the enemy to raife the fiege, and marching againft the Ruffiane, encamped before Narva, through the midft of ice and fnow, in the month of November.

The Czar, who looked upon Narva as his own, was gone to Novogorod, and had taken with him his favourite Menzikoff, then a lieutenant in the company of bombardiers of the Preobraziniki regiment $\dagger$, and afterwards raifed to the rank of fieldmarfhal, and prince; a man whofe amazing for tunes entitle him to be fpoken of more fully in another place.

Peter left the command of the army, with inftructions for the fiege, with the prince of Croy; whore family came from Flanders, and who had fately entered into the Czar's fervice $\ddagger$. Prince Dolgorouki was commiffary of the army. The jealoufy between thefe two chiefs, and the abfence of the Czar, was one reafon of the unparalleled defeat at Narva.

Charles XII. having landed at Pernau in Li. vonia with his troops, in the month of October,

[^15]
## 152 THEHISTORT

marched northward to Revel, where he defeated an advanced body of Ruffians. He continued his march, and meeting with another body, routed that likewife. The routed troops returned to the camp before Narva, which they filled with confternation. The month of November was far advanced; Narva, though unkilfully befieged, was on the point of furrendering. The young king of Sweden had not at that time above nine thoufand men with him, and could bring only ten pieces of cannon to oppofe an hundred and forty-five, with which the Ruffian entrenchments were defended. All the relations of that time, and all hifforians, without exception, agree in making the Ruffian army then before Narva amount to eighty thoufand men. The memoirs with which I have been furnifhed fay fixty thoufand; be that as it will, it is certain, that Charles had not quite nine thoufand, and that this battle was one of thofe, which evince, that the greateft victories have been frequently gained by inferior numbers, ever fince the famed one of Arabella.

CHARLES was not afraid to attack this great army , with his fmall number of troops : and taking advantage of a violent wind, and a great form of fnow, which blew directly in the faces of the Ruffians, he attacked their entrenchments under cover of fome pieces of cannon $\delta$, which he had pofted advantageoufly for the purpofe. The Ruffians had not time to form themfelves in the midft of that cloud

## OFRUSSIA.

cloud of fnow, that beat full in their faces, and aftonifhed by the difcharge of cannon, that they could not ree; and did not know the weaknefs of Charles's army.

THE duke de Croy attempted to give his orders, but prince Dolgorouki would not obey them. The Ruffian officers rofe upon the German officers : and murdered the duke's fecretary, colonel Lyon, and feveral others. Every one abandoned his polt; and tumult, confufion, and a panic terror, fpread through the whole army. The Swedith troops had nothing more to do, but to cut in pieces thofe who were flying. Some threw themfelves into the river Narva, where great numbers were drowned ; others threw down their arms, and begged for quarters from the conquering Swedes.

The duke de Croy, general Allard, and the reft of the general officers, dreaded the Ruffians more than the Swedes, and went in a body and furrendered themfelves prifoners to count Steinbok. The king of Sweden now became mafter of all the artillery. Thirty thoufand of the varquifhed enemy laid down their arms at his feet, and filed of bareheaded and difarmed before him. Prince Dolgorouki, and all the Ruffi in generals, came and fur. sendered themfelve, as well as the Germans, but did not know till fome time after they had furrendered, that they had been conquered by eight thoufand men. Amongit the prifoners was the fon of a king of Georgia, whom Charles fent to Stockholm ; his name was Mittellky Czarovitz, or Czar's fon, a further proof, that the title of Czar,

## 154 <br> THEHISTORY

or Tzar, had not its original from the Roman $\mathrm{C}_{\text {a }}$ fars.

Charles XII. loft no more than one thoufand two hundred men in this battle. The Czar's journal, which has been fent me from Peterfburg, fays, that including thofe who died at the fiege of Narva, and in the battle, and thore who were drowned in sheir flight, the Ruffians loft no more than fix thoufand men. Want of difcipline, and a panic that feized the army, was the fole caufe of the lofs of this battle. The captives were four times greater in number than the conquerors; and if we may believe Norberg $\dagger$, count Piper, who was afterwards taken prifoner by the Ruffians, reproached them, that the number of their people made prifoners in the battle exceeded by eight times the number of the whole Swedifh army. If this is truth, the Swedes muft have made upwards of feventy two thoufand prifoners. This fhews how feidom writers come at the truch of particular circumftances. One thing, however, equally inconteflible and extraordinary is, that the king of Sweden fhould tell one half of the Ruffian foldiers to go back, after having difarmed them, and the other half to repafs the river, with their arms; by this unaccountable conduct, reftoring to the Czar troops, that, being afterwards well difciplined, became invincible towards their enemies $\dagger$.

[^16]Charles

## OFRUSSIA.

 1.55Charles reaped all the advantages that could be had from a compleat victory. Immenfe magazines, tranfports loaden with provifions, the enemies pofts evacuated or taken, and the whole country in poffeflion of the Swedes, were confequences of the fortune of this day. Narva was now relieved, the fhattered remains of the Ruffian army durft not fhew themfelves; the whole country as far as Plefkow lay open; the Czar feemed to have loit all refource for carrying on the war; and the king of Sweden, victorious in lefs than twelve months over the monarchs of Denmark, Poland, and Rufita, was looked upon as the firft prince in Europe, at an age when other princes hardly think of military glory. But Peter's unthaken conftancy prevented him from being difcouraged in any of his projects.

A Russian bifhop compoied a prayer to St. Nicholas $t$, on this occafion, which was publicly read in all the churches throughout Ruffia Tbis compofition thews the firit of the times, and the inexpreffible ignorance from which Peter delivered bis councry. Amongit other things, it fays, that the furious and terrible Swedes were forcerers; and contplains that St. Nicholas had entirely abandoaed his Ruffians. The prelates o that country would blufh to w ite fuch ftuff at prefent ; and, without any offence to the holy St. Nicholas, the people ioon per-

[^17]
## 156 THE HISTORY

ceived that Peter was the moft proper perfon to be addreffed.


## C H A P. XII.

Refources after the batile of Narva. That difafer entirely repaired. Peter gains a victory near the fame place. He executes great defigns in Ruffa. The perfon, who was afterwards emprefs, made prifoner at the facking of a city. Peter's Juc. cefes. His triumph at Mofcow $\ddagger$.

## The years igor and 17e2.

TH E Czar having quitted his army before Narva, towards the end of November 1700 , in order to go and concert with the king of Poland, was informed on the road, of the victory gained by the Swedes. His conftancy in all emergencies was equal to the intrepidity and valour of Cbaries. He deferred his conference with A uguttus, and haftened to apply a rpeedy remedy to the difordered flate of his affairs. The difperfed trops rendezvoufed at great Novogorod, and went from thence to Plefkow, on the Like Peipus.

[^18]
## OFRUSSIM.

Ir was a great deal for him to be able to ftand upon the defenfive, aiter fo fignal a defeat: "I " know very well, faid he, that the Swedes will a " long time be fuperior, but at laft they will teach "r. us to conquer them."

Peter having provided for the prefent neceflity $\ddagger$, and ordered men to be raifed on every fide, he goes to Mofcow to haften the cafting of new cannon, his own having been all taken before Narva. There being a fearcity of metal, he took all the bells of the churches and of the religious houfes in Mofcow. This action thewed him free of fuperftition, and at the fame time it was no fign of impiety. With thofe bells he made one hundred large cannon, one hundred and forty-three field pieces, from three to fix pounders, befides mortars and haubitzers, which were forwarded to Plefkow. In other countilies, the fovereign commands, and his fubjects execure his orders; but here the Czar was obliged to fee every thing done himfelf. While he was making thefe preparations, he entered into a negotiation with the king of Denmark, who engaged to afit him with three regiments of foot, and three of horle; an engagement which that monarch could not fulfil.

No fooner was this treaty figned, than he burried to the theatre of war. He had an interview with king Auguftus at Birzen, on the frontiers of Courland and Lithuania *. His object was, to confirm that pronce in his refolution of maintaining the war againit Charles XII, and at the fame time to
$\ddagger 1701$,
*Feb. 77.
H 6

## 158 THE HISTORY

prevail on the Polifh Diet to enter into the quarrel. It is well known, that a king of Poland is no more than the head perfon in the republic Peter had the advantage of being always obeyed : but the kings of Poland and England, and at prefent the king of Sweden, are all obliged to treat with their fubjects. Patkul and a few Poles in the intereft of their king affifted at thefe conferences Peter promifed to af. fift them with fubfidies, and an army of twenty-five thoufand men Livonia was to be reftored to Poland, in cafe the diet would act in conjunction with their king, and affift in recovering thi province: the diet hearkened more to their fears, than to the Czar's propofals. The Poles were apprehenfive of having their liberties reftrained by the Saxons, and Ruffians, and were ftill more afraid of Charles XII. It was therefore agreed by the majority, not to engage in the quarrel.

The partifans of Auguftus grew enraged againft the contrary faction, and a civil war was kindied up in the kingdom; becaufe their monarch had an intention to recover a confiderable province.

Peter then had only a weak ally in king Auguftus ef, and the Saxon troops could be of finall fervice; and the terror which Charles XII. infpired on every fide, obliged Peter to the neceffity of depending entirely upon his own flrength.

Agter an expeditious journey from Mufcow to Courland *, to confer with Augullua ; he pofted back from Courland to Mofoow, to forward the
accompliflment of his promifes. Accordingly he difpatched prince Repnin, with four thouland men, to Riga, on the banks of the Duna, where the Saxon troups were entrenched.
The rapid progrefs of Charles increafed the general terror $\ddagger$; for paifing the Duna, in fpite of all the Saxons, who were advantageoufly pofted on the oppofite fide, he gained a compleat victory over them; and then, without waiting a moment, he made bimfelf mafter of Courland, advanced into Lithuania, and by his prefence encouraged the Polifh faction that oppofed Auguftus.

Notwithetainding all this, Peter nill purfued his defigns. General Patkul, who had engaged in his fervice, procured him fome German officers, dicciplined his troops, fupplied the place of general le Fort; and finithed what the other began. The Czar ordered relays of horfes to be provided for all the officers, and even for the German, Livonian, and Poilh foldiers, who came to ferve in his armies. He took particular care of their arms, cloarhing and fubiritence.

ON the confines of Livonia and Elonia, and to the ealtward of the pravince of Novogorod, lies the great lake Peipus, which receives from the fouth fide of Livonia the water of the iver Velika, and gives rife in its northern part to the river Aaiova, that wafhes the walls of the town varva, near wuich the swedes got their famous victory. Lhis lake is up wards of thirty leagues in length, and from twelve
to fifteen in breadth. It was neceffary to keep a fleet there, to prevent the Swedifi flips from infulting the province of Novogorod; to be ready to make a defcent upon their coalts, and above all, to be a nurfery for feamen. Peter employed the greateft part of the year 1703 in building on this lake an hundred half gallies, to carry about $\mathfrak{f f t y}$ men each; and other veffels were fitted out on the lake Ladoga. He directed the building of thefe veffels himfelf and fet his new failors to work: thofe who had been employed in 1697 , at the Palus Mrotis, were then ftationed near the Baltic. He frequently left thofe affairs to go to Mofcow, and the other provinces; in order to eftablifh the obfervance of the late cuftoms he had begun, or to introduce new ones.

All princes who have employed the times of peace in founding and eftablithing public works, have perpetuated their memories: but that Peter, juft after his defeat at Narva, fhould apply to the junction of the Baltic, Cafpian and the European feas by canals, has crowned him with more real glosy, than the moft fignal victory. It was in the year 1702 , that he began to dig that deep canal, incending to join the Ianais and the Wolga. Other communications were likewife to be made, by means of lakes between the 1 anais and the Duna; whole waters empty themfelves into the Baltic, in the neighbourhood of Riga. But this latter project feemed to be ftill at a great diftance, for Peiel was far from having Riga in his poficflion.

Wmile Charles was ravaging all Poland, Pe-

## OFRUSSIA.

ter brought from that kingdom, and from Saxony, a number of fhepherds with their flocks, in order to have wool fit for making good cloth; he likewife erected linen and paper manufactories: gave orders for collecting a number of mechanics; luch as fmiths, braziers, armourers and founders; and the Siberian mines were dug for ore. Thus was he continually contriving means for the embellifhment and defence of his dominions.

Charles pufhed on his victories, and left a fufficient body of troops, as he imagined, on the frontiers of the Czar's dominions, to fecure all the poffeffions of Sweden. He had concerted a plan to dethrone Auguftus, and afterwards to purfue the Czar with his victurious arms to the gates of Mof. cow.

There happened feveral flight fkirmifhes during this year, between the Ruffians and Swedes, in which the latter did not always prove fuperior; and even in thofe where they had the better, the Ruflians improved in the art of war. In fhort, in little more than twelve months after the battle of Narva, Peter's tro ps were fo well difciplined, that they defeated one of the beft generals belonging to Charles XII.

Peter was then at Plefkow, from whence he detached numerous troops on all fidea, to attack the Swedes; the Ruffians were victorious, notwithlanding being only commanded by a Ruflian general, a native of the country, and not a coreigner. His general cheremetow, by a ikiliul mariocuvre, furprifed feveral troops of the owedith general Slippembac,

## 162 THE HISTORY

pembac *, on the frontiers of Livonia; and at laft obtained a victory over that officer himfelf. And now, for the firft time, the Ruffians took from the Swedes four of their colours; which was thought a great number.

The lakes of Peipus and Ladago were for fome time afterwards the theatres of naval engagements between the Ruffians and Swede-; in which the latter had the fame advantages as by land; owing to their good difcipline: yet the Ruffians had fome few fucceffes with their half gallies, in a general action at the lake Peipus, in which field marfhal Scheremetow took a Swedifh frigate $\dagger$.

It was by means of this lake the Czar kept Livonia and $\pm$ fonia in continual alarms ; his gallies often difimbarked feveral regiments in thofe provinces; who re-imbarked whenever they railed of fuccels; but when they had any advantage, they always improved it : the bwedes were defeated twice in the neighbourhood of Derpt $\ddagger$, while they were victorious every where elie.

In all thefe engagements the Ruflians were always fuperior in number: which made Charles XII. who was to fuccefstul in every other place, give himfelf little concern about the fmall fuccefs of the Czar, not confidering that the numerous forces of his rival were every day growing more formidable, as they improved in their difcipline, fo as one day to become a match for himfelt.

While both nations wore thus engaged by fea - Jan. 11. 1\%02. $\dagger$ May. $\ddagger$ June and july.

## OFRUSSIA.

and land in Livonia, Ingria, and Eftonia, the Czar receives advice, that a Swedifh fleet had fet fail to deftroy Archangel; upon which he immediately fled thither, and all were aftonifhed to hear of his being on the coafts of the Frozen fea, when he was thought to be at Mofcow. He put the town into a pofture of defence, prevented the landing of the Swedes, drew the plan of a citadel, called the New Dwina, laid the firft ftone, returned to Mofcow, and from thence to the feat of war.

Charles advanced into Poland; but the Rufo fians, on their fide, made a progrefs in Ingria and Livonia. Marfhal Scheremetow marched to meet the Swedifh army commanded by Slippembac, fought a battle near the little river Embac, and defeated him, taking fixteen colours, and twenty pieces of cannon. Norberg places this action on the firft of December 1701; but the journal of Peter the Great fixes it on the nineteenth of July 1702.

The Ruffian general then marched onwards $\ddagger$, laid the whole country under contribution, and takes the little town of Marienburgh, fituated on the confines of Ingria and Livonia. There are feveral towns of this name in the north of Europe; but this, though it no longer exilts, is more eelebrated in hiftory than all the others, by the adventure of the emprefs Catberine.

This little town, having furrendered at difcretion, the Swedes, who defended it, either through

I Auguit 6th.

164 THE HISTORY
miffake or defign, fet fire to the magazines. The Ruffians, enraged at this, deftroyed the town, and carried away all the inhabitants. A mong the prifoners was a young woman, a native of Livonia, who had been educated by Mr . Gluck, a Lutheran minifler of that place, and who afterwards became the fovereign of thofe who had taken her captive, and governed Ruflia by the name of the emprefs Catherine.

THERE had been feveral inflances before this of private women being raifed to the throne. Nothing was more common in Ruflia, and in all Afratic kingdoms, than for kings to marry their own fubjects; but that a poor ftranger, who had been taken prifoner in the ruins of a plundered city, fhould become the abfolute fovereign of that very empire, whither fhe was led captive, is an inftance which fortune and merit never produced but this time in the annals of the world.

The Czar's arms were fuccefsful in Ingria; for their balf galleys on the lake Ladoga compelled the Swe ifh fleet to retire to Wiburg, a town fituate at the other extremity of this great lake, from whence they could fee the fiege of the fortrefs of Noteburg, which was then carried on by general Scheremetow. This was an affair of much greater imporance than was imagined at that time, as it might open a communication with the Baltic Sea, the conflant aim of Peter the Great. NotebubG was a frong fortified town, built on an ifland in the lake Ladoga, which it entirely commands, and by that means, whoever is mafter 9:土) ing
of it, muft be mafters alfo of that part of the river Neva, which empties itfelf into the Baltic not far from thence. The Ruffians bombarded the town night and day, from the eighteenth of September to the twelfth of October; and at length, having made three breaches, gave a general affault. The Swedifh garrifon was reduced to an hundred men, only capable of defending the place; and what is very aftonifhing, they continued to defend it, and obtained an honourable capitulation even in the breaches. Colonel Slippembac, who commanded there, would not furrender the town, but on condition of being permitted to fend for two Swedifh officers from the neareft poit, to examine the breaches, in order to be witneffes for him to the king his malter, that eighty three foldiers, who were all then left of the garrifon capable of bearing arms, befides one hundred and firty fix fick and wounded, did not furrender to a whole army, till it was impoffible for them to fight longer, or to preferve the town. Ihis circumftance alone fhews, what fort of an enemy the Czar had to contend with, and the neccffity there was of all his induftry to improve his troops in military difcipline. He diftributed gold medals among the officers, and befowed rewards on all the private men; except a few, whom he punithed for running away, during the affault. Their fellow foldiers fpit in their faces, and afterwards fhot them to death, thus adding ig. nominy to punifhment.

Noteburg was repaired, and its name changed to that of shluffelburg, or the city of Key, becaufe
caufe that place is the key of Ingria and Finland. The firft governor was that Menzikoff, whom we have already mentioned, and who was become a very good officer, and had fignalized himfelf, during the Gege, and therefore deferved that honour. This example ferved as an encouragement to all who have merit, without being diftinguifhed by high birth.

After this campaign of 1702 , Peter was defirous that Scheremetow, and the officers who had fignalized themfelves, fhould make a triumphant entry into Mofcow. All the prifoners taken in this campaign marched in the retinue of the conquerors *, and before them were carried the Swedifh colours and flandards, together with the flag of the Swedifh frigate taken on the lake Peipus. Peter affifted himfelf in the preparations for this triumphal entry, as he had fhared in the great actions that were celebrated by it.

These folemnities were defigned to infpire e. mulation, otherwile they would have been no more than idle oftentation Charles difdained all thefe public thews, and, after the battle of Narva, held his enemies, their efforts, and their triumphs, in equal contempt.

[^19]
## C H A P. XIII.

Reformationat Moscow.
New fucceffes. Founding of Peterfourg. The Czar takes Narva, \&c.

## The year 1703.

THE fhort flay which the Czar made at Morcow, in the beginning of the winter 1703 , was employed in feeing all his new regulations executed, and in improving the civil as well as the military government. Lven' his very diverfions were confecrated to make his fubjects relifh the new manner of living he had introduced amongft them. It was with this view he invited all the boyars and ladies of Mofow to the marriage of one of his buffoons, at which every one was required to appear dreffed in the ancient fafhion. They ferved up the dinner juft in the fame manner as thofe in the fixteenth century $\ddagger$. By an old fuperfitious cuftom, no one was to light fire on the weddingday, even in the fevereft cold. Thus cuftom was obferved very firiclly upon this occafion. The Rurfians formerly never drank wine, but only mead and brandy; no other liquors were allowed on this day,

[^20]
## THE HISTORY

and, when they complained, he replied, in a joking manner, "This was a cuftom with your an. ceffors, and old cuftoms are always the beft." This pleafantry contributed much to reform thofe who preferied paft tines to the prefent, or at lealt it put a ftop to their murmurings ; and there are feveral nations that fland in need of the fame example.

An eftablifhment more ufeful than any of the reff, was that of a printing-houfe for Ruffian and Latin types, the materials of which were brought from Holland. They began with printing tranflations in the Ruflian language of feveral books of morality and polite literature. Ferguion eftablifhed fchools for geometry, aftronomy, and navigation.

Another foundation, no lefs neceffary and ufeful, was that of a large hofpital; not one of thofe houfes which encouraged idlenefs, and perpetuated the mifery of the people, but fuch as the Czar had feen at Amfterdam, where old perfons and children are employed at work, and where every perfon is ferviceable to the public.

He eftablifhed many manuractures; and as foon as be fet a-going all thofe new arts which he had brought into Mofcow, he haftened to Veronitz, to give directions for building two thips of eighty guns, with long cheft exactly clofed to the ribs of the veffel, for the eafier floating of the fhip over the fhoals and banks of fant that lay about a loph. A contrivance like that ufed in Holland, to get their large Gips over the Pampus.

## OFRUSSIA.

Having prepared every thing for an expedition againft the Turks, he immediately took his route for the frontiers of Sweden. He alfo went to vifit the fhips that he gave orders to be built at O Jonitz *, a town between the lakes of Ladoga and Onega, where he had eftablifhed a foundery for making all kinds of arms; and where every thing had all the look of preparations for war ; whilft at Mofcow flourifhed all the arts of peace. A fpring of mineral waters, which has been lately difcovered near Olonitz, has added to the reputation of that place. Fiom thence he proceeded to Shluffelburg, to improve the fortifications.

We have already obferved, that Peter was determined to pafs regularly through all the military degrees: he had ferved as lieutenant of bombardiers under prince Menzikoff, before that favourite was made governor of Shlufelburg, and now he took the rank of captain, and ferved under marthal scheremetow.

There was an important fortrefs near the lake Ladoga, and not far from the river Neva, named Nyantz or Nya. It was of the utmoft importance to make himfelf mafter of this p'ace, in order to fecure his conquefts, and favour his other defigns. As he was obliged to befiege the place both by fea and land, he fent therefore a number of fmall fhips full of foldiers, to hinder the Swedes from fending any fuccours that way + . The citadel furrendered, and two Swedifh veffels arrived too late to affitt the

[^21]befieged,
befieged, being bath attacked and taken by the Czar. His journal oberves, that as a reward for his fervice, "The captain of the bombardiers was created knight of the order of St. Andrew by admiral Golowin, the firft knight of that order."

After the taking the fort of Nya, he came to a refolation of building the city of Feterfburg, at the mouth of the Neva, upon the gulph of Finland.

The affairs of king Auguftus were in a defperate way. The extraordinaly victories of the Swedes in Poland bad encouraged his enemies in the oppofition, and even his friends had obliged him to difmifs a body of twenty thoufand Ruffians that the Czar bad fent him to reinforce his army. They thought by this facrifice to deprive the malecontents of all pretext for joining the king of Sweden : but enemies are difarmed by force, an appearance of weaknefs only making them more in. folent. The twenty thouland men that had been diciplined by Patkul were of infinite fervice in Li vonia and Ingria, while Augufius was lofing his dominions. This rein orcement, and above all, the poffiffion of Nya, enabled the Czar to found his new capital.

It was in this barren and marfhy fot of ground, which communicates with the main land only by one way, that Peter laid the foundation of Pe terfburg, in the fixtieth degree of latitude, and the forty-fourth and a half of longitude. The ruins of fome of the baftions of Nyantz were made ufe

## OFRUSSIA.

ufe of for the firft flones of the foundation $\ddagger$. They began by building a finall fort upon one of the iflands, which is now in the center of the city. The Swedes beheld, without apprehenfion, a fettlement on the midft of a morafs, and inacceffible to veffels of burden; but in a very fhort time they faw the fortifications advanced, a town raifed, and the little ifland of Cronffadt, fituate over againft it, changed in 1704 into an impregnable fortrefs, under the cannon of which even the largeft fleets may ride at anchor in fafety.

Such works as thefe, which feemed to require a time of the moft profound peace, were carried on in the very middle of a war. Workmen of every fort were called together from Mofcow, Aftracan, Cafan, and the Ukraine, to affilt in building the new city. Neither the difficulties of the ground, that was to be drained and raifed, nor the diftance of materials, the unforefeen obftacles which are for ever ftarting up in all great undertakings; nor, laftly, the mortality which carried off a prodigious number of workmen, could make the Royal Founder defft from this undertaking; but, in the face of five months, a new city arofe from the ground. It is true, indeed, it was little better than a clufter of huts, with only two brick houfes furrounded by rampaits; but this was all that was then needful. Time and perfeverance accomplifhed the reft. In lefs than five months atter the founding of Peterfburg, a Dutch fhip

[^22]Vol. I.

1

## 172 THE HISTOR Y

came to trade there, the captain of which was a. bundantly rewarded $\ddagger$, and the Dutch foon found the way to Peterfburg.

While Peter was directing the eftablifhment of this coluny, he took care to render it inacceffible to the enemy, by making himfelf mafter of the neighbouring pofts. A Swedifh colonel, named Croniort, had taken poft on the river Seftra, and thence threatened the growing city. Peter, without delay, marched againft him with his two regiments of guards $\S$, defeated him, and obliged him 10 repafs the river. When he had thus provided for the fecurity of the town, be went to Olonitz, $t 0$ give directions, for building a number of fmall veffels, and then returned to Peterfburg ${ }^{*}$, on board a frigate that had been built by his direc. tion, taking with him fix tranfport veff Is for prefent ufe, till the others could be finithed. Even at this juncture he fent fuccours to the king of Poland $t$, viz. twelve thoufand foot, and a fubfidy in money of three hundred thoufand rubles, which make about one million five hundred thoufand French livres. It has been remarked, that his annual revenue did not exceed then five millions of rubles; by far too fmall a fum for the expence of bis fleets, of his armies, and of his new eftablifhments. He had fortified Novogorod, Plefkow, Kiow, Smolenfko, Afoph, Archangel, and founded a capital. Yet he was ftill able to affitt his ally with men and money. Cornelius le Bruin,

$\ddagger$ No\%. \%os. §Julys. $\quad$ Sep. $\quad$ t Nov.

## OFRUSSIA.

2 Dutchman, who was on his travels, and at that time in Rufia, and with whom he frequently converfed very freely, as indeed he did with all ftrangers, fays, that the Czar himfelf affured him, that he had fill three hundred thoufand rubles remaining in his coffers, atter all the expences of the war were defrayed.

In order to fecure his infant city of Peterfburg againft any infult, he went in perfon to found the depth of water thereabouts, fixed upon a place for building the fort of Cronftadt; and, after making the model of it in wood with his own hands, he employed prince Menzikoff to carry it into execution. From thence he fet out to pafs the winter at Mofcow, in order to eftablifh, by degrees, the feveral alterations he had made in the laws, manners and cuftoms of Ruffia *. He regulated the finances, and put them upon a refpectable footing. He haftened the works that were carrying on in the Veronitz, and Afoph, and in an harbour which he had caufed to be made on the Palus Mrotis, under the fort Taganrok.

The Porte + was alarmed at thefe preparations, and fent an embafly to the Czar to complain thereof: to which he returned for anfwer, that he was as much king in his own dominions as the Grand Signior was in Turky, and that it was no infringement of the peace, to render the Ruffian power refpectable on the Euxine fea.

[^23]
## THE HISTORY

UPON his return to Peteifburg $\ddagger$, finding his new citadel of Cronftadt, which had been founded in the bofom of the fea, quite finithed, he furmifhed it with compleat artillery. But in order to fettle himfelf firmly in Ingria, and entirely to deface the difgrace he had fuffered before Narva, he thought it neceffary to take that city. While he was making preparations for the fiege, a fmall fleet appeared on the lake Peipus, to oppofe his defigns. The Ruffian half galleys came out to attack them, and took the whole fquadron, which had on board ninety eight pieces of cannon. After this vietory, the Czar lays fiege to Narva both by fea and land, and which was moft furprifing, he lays fiege to the city of Derpt in Efionia at the fame time. §.

WHo would have imagined, that there was an univerlity in Derpt? Guftavus Adolphus had founded one there, but it did not make that city famous, Derpt being only known by thefe two fieges. Feter was continually going from one to the other, forwarding the attacks, and directing all the different operations. The Swedifh general Slippembac was in the neighbourhood of Derpt, with a body of two thoufand five hundred men.

The befiegers expected every inftant when he would throw the fuccours into the place; but Pe ter, on this occafion, had recourfe to a ftratagem, worthy of frequent imitation. He ordered two re. giments of foot, and one of horfe, to be clothed in
the fame uniform, and to carry the fame ftandards and colours as the Swedes. Thefe fham Swedes attack the trenches, and the Ruffians pretend to be put to flight; the garrifon deceived by appearances, make a fally ${ }^{*}$; upon which the mock combatants join their forces, and fall upon the Swedes, one half of whom were left dead upon the fpot, and the reft made a fhift to get back to the town. Slippembac arrives foon after with fuccours to relieve it, but is intirely routed. At length Derpt was obliged to capitulate, juft as the Czar was preparing every thing for a general affault $\dagger$.

At the fame time, Peter met with a confiderable check on the fide of his new city of Peterßurg; but this did nor prevent him either from going on with the new building of that place, or from vigoroufly profecuting the fiege of Narva. It has already been noticed, that he fent a reinforcement of troops and money to king duguitus, when his enemies were taking the throne from him; but thofe aids proved of no fervice. The Ruffins having joined the Lithuanians who adbered to Auguftus, were totally routed in Courland by the Swedifh general Lewenhaupt $\xi$ : and had the conquerors din rected their efforts towards Livonia, Eftonia, and Ingria, they might have ruined the Czar's new works, and deftroyed all the fruits of his great enterprizes. Peter was every day undermining the out wall of Sweden, while Chatles did not oppofe

| - June 27, 1704.July 23. <br>  <br> I 3$\quad$ § July 33. |  |  |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  |  | him |

## 176 THE HISTORY

him enough, for he fought a glory lefs ufeful, though more brilliant.

A SWEDISH colonel on the twelfth of July 1704 , at the head of a detachment, made the Poliih nobility elect a new king, on the field of election, called Kolo, near Warfaw. The cardinal, primate of the kingdom, and feveral bifhops, fubmitted themfelves to a Lutheran prince, notwithftanding the threatenings and excommunications of the Pope. In fhort, every thing yielded to force. No body is ignorant in what manner Stanillaus Lerzinky was elected king, and how Charles XII. obliged the greatelt part of Poland to acknowledge him.

Peter abandoned not the dethroned king, he redoubled his fuccours in proportion to the loffes of his ally; and while his enemy made kings, he conquered the Swedifh generals one after another in Eftonia and Ingria; he then went to the fiege of Narva, and attacked it valiantly. There were three baftions, famous at leaft for their names, called Victory, Honour, and Glory. The Czar carried them all three fword-in-hand. The befiegers entered into the city, which they plundered, and exercifed all thofe cruelties, which were but too cuftomary at that time, between the Swedes and Ruffians.

Peter, on this occafion *, fet an example which ought to have gained him the hearts of his new fubjects. He ran every where in per:

\author{

- Augurt 20, 3704.
}


## OFRUSSIA.

fon, to fop the pillage and murder, fnatches feveral women out of the hands of the brutal foldiers, and, after having, with his own band, flain two of thofe barbarians, who did not obey his otders, he enters the town houfe, whither the citizens had ran in crouds for fhelter, and laying his fword, yet fmoaking with blood, upon the table, "This fword, faid he, is not flained with the blood of your fellow citizens, but with that of my own foldiers, which I have filt to lave your lives."

CR:

## C H A P. XIV.

Peter the Great keeps polfefion of all Ingria, whilft Gharles XII triumphs elfewhere Rife of Menzikoff. Peterfourg fecurcd. The Gzar executes his defigns notwithftanding the villories of the king of Sweden $\oint$.

## The years 1704 and 1705.

PE T If $R$ being now mafter of all Ingria, conferred the government of that province upon Menzikoff; and gave him the title of prince, and the rank of major general. The pride and prejum
§ All the foregoing chapters, and like ife thofe which follow, are taken frow the journals of eter the Great and the papers fent me from Yeterßourg, carefully compared with other memorials.

## 178 THE HISTORY

dice of other countries might find fault with a pafry cook's boy being made a general, governor, and prince ; but Peter had already accuftomed his fubjects not to be aftonifhed to fee every thing given to talents, and nothing given to noble birth 2 lone. Menzikoff, by a lucky accident, had while a boy, been taken from his original obfcurity, and placed in the Czar's family, where he learned feveral languages, and had made himfelf acquainted with bufinefs and arms; and having found means to ingratiate himfelf with his mafter, he afterwards knew how to render himfelf neceffary. He greatly advanced the woiks at Peterfburg, of which he had the direction: feveral brick and flone-houfes were already built, with an arfenal and magazines; the fortifications were completed, but the palaces were not built till fome time after.

As foon as Peter was fettled in Narva, he ordered frefti fuccours to the king of Poland, who had been lately dethroned. He promifed him a body of troops over and above the twelve thoufand men he had already fent him, and gave general Repnin orders to march $\ddagger$ from the frontiers of Lithuania, with fix thoufand horfe, and the fame number of foot. All this while he did not forget his colony of Peterfburg. The buildings went on very faft ; his navy grew more numerous; feveral hips and frigates were on the flocks at Olonit:; thefe he took care to fee finifh-

$$
\ddagger \text { Auguft } 19.1704 \text {. }
$$

## OFRUSSIA.

ed $\ddagger$, and brought them himfelf into the harbour of $P$ terfbing.
every time he returned to Mofoow, he made triumphal entries. In this manner did he revifit his capital this year *, from whence he made only one excurfion, to be prefent at the launching of his. firft thip of eighty guns upon the Veronitz of which he had drawn the dimenfions the year before.

As foon as the weather would permit for opening the campaign in Poland, he haftened to join the army ๆI, which he had fent to the affiltance of Auguitus, and were on the fontiers of that kingdonn; but while he was thus fupporting his ally, a Swedifh fleet put to fea to deltroy Peterfburg, and the fortrefs of Cronftadt, as yet hardly fimifhed. This fleet confilted of twenty-two fhips of war, from fifty four to fixty-four guns, befides fix frigates, and two fire-fhips. The troops that were fent on this expedition, made a defcent on the little ifland of Kotin ; but a Ruffian colonel, named Tolbogwin, who commanded a regiment there, ordered his foldiers to lie down flat on their bellies, while the Swedes were landing §; and then ordering them to run up fuddenly, they inade fo brifk and well directed a fire, that the Swedes were put into confufion, and forced to their fhips, leaving behiad them all their dead, and upwards of three hundied prifoners.

The fleet ftill continued hovering upon the
$\ddagger$ OR, II. * Dec, 30. I May 1705. § June 27, 1705 .
I 5
coaft,
coaft, and threatened Peterfburg. They made another defcent, and were repulfed as before; a body of land forces were alfo advancing from Wiburg, under the command of the Swedifh general Meidel, and took their route by Shluffelburg *: this was the boldeft attempt Charles had yet made upon the territories, which Peter had either conquered or new formed. The Swedes were repulfed on every fide, and Peterfburg remained in feeurity.

The Czar, on the other hand, marched towards Courland, defigning to penetrate as far as Riga. His plan was to make himfelf mafter of Livonia, while Charles XII. was bufied in reducing the Poles entirely under the obedience of the new king he had given them. Peter was Aill at Wilnaw in Lithuania, and his general Scheremetow was approaching towards Mittau, the capital of Courland; but there he was met by Lewenhaupt, already famous by feveral victories; and a battle was fought between the two armies at a place called Gemaverfhoff, or Gemavers.

In all thofe battles, where experience and difcipline decide the day, the Swedes, though inferior in number, had always the advantage. The Ruffians were totally defeated $\ddagger$, and loft all their artillery. Peter, notwithftanding the lofs of three battles, at Gemavers, at Jacobftadt and at Narva,

## OFRUSSIA.

always retrieved his loffes, and even converted them to his advantage.

AETER the battle of Gemavers, he marched a numerous army into Courland ; came before Mittau, made himfelf mafter of the town, and afterwards laid fiege to the capital, which was taken by capitulation.

The Ruffan troops were blamed at that time for ditinguithing their fucceffes + by rapine and plunder; a practice of too great antiquity in all na. tions. But Peter, at the taking of Narva, had made fuch changes in this cultom, that the Ruffian foldiers, appointed to guard the vaults, where the grand dukes of Courland were buired, in the caftle of Mittau, perceiving that the bodies had been taken out of their tombs, and ftript of their ornaments, refufed to take poffeffion of their poft, till a Swedith colonel had been firft fent for to infpect the condition of the place, who gave them a certificate that this outrage had been committed by the Swedes.

A RUMOUR which was fpread throughout the whole empire, that the Czar had been totally deleated at the battle of Gemavers, proved of greater prejudice to his affars, than even the lofs of that battle. The remainder of the ancient Strelizes in garrifon at Attracan, emboldened by this falfe report, mutinied, and murdered the governor of the town. Peter was obliged 80. fend marihal Scheremetow with a body of

## 182 THE HISTORY

forces to quell the infurrection, and punifh the ringleaders.

The Czar at this time feemed in a critical fituation. The fuccefs and valour of Charles XII; the misfortunes of $\Lambda$ uguftus; the forced neutrality of Denmark; the infurrection of the ancient Strelitzes; the murmurs of a people, fenfible of the reftraint, but not of the utility of the late reformation; the difcontent of the grandees, who found themfelves fubjected to military difcipline; and laftly, the exhaufted flate of the revenue, were fuflicient to have difpirited any prince but Peter: yet he did not defpond even for an inflant. He foon quelled the revolt, and having provided for the fafety of Ingria, and fecured the pofieflion of the citadel of Mittau, in fpite of the victorious Lewenhaupt, who had not troops enough to oppofe him; he found himfelf at lio berty to march an army through Samogitia and Lithuania.

Peter now partook of the fame glory with Charles XII and gave laws to Poland. He advanced as far as Fikoczin; where he had an interview for the fecond time with king Auguftus; and he confoled with him in his misfortunes, promifing to avenge bis caufe, and at the fame time mace him a prefent of fome colours, which Menzikoff had taken from the troops of his rival. They afterwards went towards Grodno, the capital of Lithuania, and faid there till the fifo teenth of December. At their parting, Peter gave him both men and money, and, according
OF RUSSIA.
to his ufual cuftom, went to pals fome time of the winter at Mofcow $\dagger$, to make the arts and laws flourifh there, after having made a very difficult campaign.

## 

## C HA P. XV.

While Peter is frengthening his conquefts, and improving his dominions, his enemy Charles XII. gains leveral battles: gives laws to Poland and Saxony. iuguftus, notwithftanding a victory gained by the Ruffians, receives laws from Charles XII. Iugufus renounces the crown, and delivers up Patkul the Czar's ambaffador. Murder of Patkul, who is condemned to be broke upon the wheel

## The year 1706.

PETER was hardly come back to Mof cow, when he was informed that Charles XII. after being every where victorious, was advancing towards Grodno, to attack the Ruffian troops. King Auguftu had been obliged to fly from Grodno, and retire in bate towards Saxony, with tour regiments of Ruffian dragoons: a ftp which both weakened and ancouraged the arming of his protector. The Czar found all the roads
to Grodno occupied by the Swedes , and his troops di perfed.

While he was affembling his troops in Lithuania, with great difficulty, the famons Schulemburg, who was the laft refource of Auguftus, and who afterwards acquired fo much glory by the defence of Corfu againft the rurks, advanced on the fide of Great Poland, with about twelve thoufand $\mathrm{S}_{2}$. xons, and Gx thouland Ruffians, taken from the troops which the Czar had trufled with this unfortunate prince. Schulemburg expected, with fome reafon, that he would be able to fave Auguftus from being ruined: he faw that Charles XII. was fully employed in Lithuania, and that there were only a body of ten thoufand Swedes under general Renfchild who would interrupt his march. He thereupon advanced with confidence to the frontiers of Silefia; which is the paflage from Saxony into Upper Poland. When he was near the village of Fraufladt, on the frontiers of tat kingdom, he met marihal Renfchild, who was coming to give him battle.

Notwithstanding the care I take to avoid repeating what has been already mentioned in the hiftory of Charles XII. I am ubliged in this place to take notice once more, that there was in the Saxon army a French regiment, that had been taken prifoners at the famous battle of Hochiftet, and obliged to ferve in the Saxon troops. My memoirs inform me, that this regiment had the charge of the artillery, and add, that the French, being admirers of the fame and reputation of Charles XII.

## OF RUSSIA.

and difcontented with the Saxon fervice, laid down their arms as foon as they came in fight of the enemy $t$, and defired to be taken into the Swedifh army, in which they continued to the end of the war. Ihis defertion was a fignal of a total overthrow to the Ruffian army, of which no more than three battalions were faved, and almoft every man of thele were wounded; and as no quarter was granted, the remainder were all killed.

NORBERG the chaplain pretends, that the Swedifh word at this battle was, "In the name of God," and that of the Ruffians, "Kill all;" but it was the Swedes who killed all in the name of God. The Czar himfelf declares in one of his manifeftoes $\ddagger$, that a number of Ruffian Coffacks and Calmucks, that had been made prifoners, were murdered in cool blood three days after the battle. The irregular troops on both fides had accuftomed their generals to thefe cruelties, than which greater were never committed in the moft barbarous times. I had the honour to hear king Stataflaus himfelf fay, that in one of thofe engazements, which were fo frequent in Poland, a Ruffian office, who had formerly been one of his triends, came to put himfelf under his pro-- tection, after the defeat of the corps which he commanded; and that the Swedifh general Stembok thot him dead with a pittol, while he held him in his arm

The Ruflians had now loft four pitched battles with the Swedes, without reckoning the other victories of Charles XII. in Poland. The Czar's troops that were in Grodno were in danger of greater difgrace, by being furrounded on all fides; but he fortunately found means to get them together, and even to ft engthen them with new reinforcements. Being obliged to provide for the fafety of his army, and the fecurity of his conquefts in Ingria, he ordered prince Menzikoff to march with the army under his command rattward, and from thence fouthward as far as kiow.

While his men were upon their march, he repairs to shluffelburg from thence to Narva and to his colony or Peterfburg $\ddagger$, and puts thote places in a pofture of defence. From the Balcic heflies to the banks of the Boritthenes, to march into Poland by the way of Kiow, making it ftill his conftant endeavour to render thofe victories of Charles, which he had not been able to prevent, of as little advantage to the victor as poffible. At this very time he meditated a new cot queft; namely, that of Wiburg, the capital of Carelia, fituated on the gulph of Finland. He went to befiege this place, but it withflood the power of his arms *; fuccours arrived in feafon, and he was obliged to raife the fiege. His rival Charles XII. did not really make any conquefts, though he gained fo many battles: he puriued king Auguftus into Sax. ony, being always more intent upon crufhing that

[^24]prince beneath the weight of his fuperior power and reputation, than upon recovering Ingria, that had been wrefted from him by a vanquithed enemy.

Charles fpread terror through all Upper Poo land, Silefia, and Saxony. King Auguftus's whole family, his mother, his wife, his fon, and the principal nobility of the country, were re* tired into the heart of the empire. Auguftus now fued for peace, chufing rather to truft hime felf to the clemency of his conqueror, than to the arms of his protector. He negociated a treaty, which fript him of his crown, and covered him at the fame time with difgrace. This was a fecret treaty, and was to be concealed from the Czar's generals, with whom he had taken retuge in Poland, while Charles XII, was giving laws in Leipfic, and reigned ablolute fovereign throughout his electorate.

His plenipotentiaries had already figned the fatal convention, by which he not only divefted himfelf of the crown of Poland, but promifed never more to affume the title of king $\oint$, at the fame time he recognized Staniflaus, renounced bis alliance with the Czar his benefactor, and, to compleat his humiliation, engaged to celiver up to Charles XII. John Renold Patkul, the Czaits ambaflador and general in the Ruffian fervice, who was then actually fighting his caufe. He had fome time betore ordered Patkul to be arrefted, contrary to the law of
nations, upon falfe fufpicions; and now, in direet violation of thefe laws, he delivered him up to his enemy. It had been more to his credit to have died fword-in hand, than to have concluded fuch a treaty: a treaty which not only robbed him of his crown, and of his character; but likewife endangered his liberty, becaufe he was at that time in the power of prince Menzikoff in Pofnania, and the few Saxons that were with him were paid by the Ruffians.

Prince Menziknff was oppofed in that diftrict by a Swedifh army, reinforced with a ftrong party of Poles, in the intereft of the new king Staniflaus, under the command of general Maderfeld; and not knowing that Auguftus had engaged in a treaty with the enemies of Kuffi, had propofed to attack them; and Auguftus did not dare to refufe. The battle was fought near Kaliffi, in the palatinate bee longing to Stanifiaus $t$. This was the firtt pitched battle the Ruffians had gained againft the swedes. Prince Menzikoff had all the glory of the action; four thoufand of the enemy were left dead on the field, and two thoufand five hundred and ninety" eight were taken prifoners.

IT is difficult to think how Auguftus could be prevailed on, after this battle, to ratify a treaty which deprived him of all the benefit of his victorv. But Charles was triumphant in Saxony, where his very name intimidated his enemies. The fuccefs of the Buffians appeared to inconfiderable, and the Polifh

$$
\dagger \text { oct. } 19
$$

party againft $\Lambda u g u f t u s$ was fo ill-advifed, that he figned that fatal convention. Neither did he ftop here: he wrote to his envoy Finkftein a letter, that was if poffible more fhameful than the treaty itfelf; for therein he afked pardon for having obtained a victory, "protefting, that the battle had been fought agajnft his will ; that the Ruflians, and the Poles his adherents, had obliged him to it; that he had, with a view of preventing it, actually made fome movements to abandon Menzikoff, that Maderfeld might have beaten him, had he made the moft of that opportunity; that he was ready to reftore all the Swedifh prifoners, or to break with the Ruifians; and that, in fine, he would give the king of Sweden all manner of fatisfaction," for having dared to beat his troops.

THis whole affair is ftrictly true, however ftrange and furprizing it may appear. When we reflect, that, with all this weaknefs, Auguftus was one of the braveft princes in turope; we may plainly perceive, that the lofs or prefervation, the rife or decline of empires, are entirely owing to a becoming firmnefs of mind.

There were two other circumftances concurred to compleat the misfortunes of the king of Poland elector of Saxony, and fhew the abule which Charles XII. made of his good fortune. The firft was his obliging Augultus to write a letter of congratulation to the new king Staniflaus: the fecond was terrible; he even compelled Auguftus to deliver up Patkul, the Czar's ambaffador and general. It is fufficiently known to all Europe, the
that this minifter was afterwards broke upon the wheel at Cafimir, in the month of September 1707. Norberg the chaplain confeffes that the orders for his execution were all written in Charles's own hand.

Ihere is not a civilian in all Europe, nay even the vileft flave, but muft feel the whole horror of this barbarous injuftice. The firft crime of this unfortunate man was, his having made an humble reprefentation of the rights and privileges of his country, at the head of fix Livonian gentlemen, who were fent as deputies from the whole piovince: he was condemned to die for fulfilling the firit of duties, that of ferving his country agrecable to her laws. This iniquitous fentence put him in full poffeffion of a right, which all mankind derive from nature, that of chufing his country. As he was ambaffador to one of the greatert monarchs in the univerfe, his perfon ought to have been facred On this occafion, the law of nature and nations was violated by the la ws of force. The fplendor of glory formerly covered fuch barbarities, but at prefent they put a lafting fain and reproach on military glory.

## 

## C H A P. XVI.

A defign to fet up a third king in Poland. Charles XII. Sets out from Saxony with a flourifoing army, and paljes through Poland like a conqueror. Cruelties exercifed. Conduct of the Czar. Suc* ceffes of Charles XII. who at length advances towards Rulfia.

## The year 1707 and 1708.

CHARLES XII. enjoyed at Altranfladt, near Leipfic, the fruits of his victories; the proteftant princes of the German empire flocking in crouds to pay homage to him, and beg his protection. He received ambaffadors from almolt all the potentates of Europe. The emperor Jofeph implicitly followed his directions. Peter then feeing that king Auguftus had renounced his protection, and the Polifh crown, and that a part of the nation had acknowledged Staniflaus, liftened to the propofals made him by Yolkova, of electing a third king.

Several palatines were propofed at the diet of Lublin, and prince Ragotfki, who was long kept in prifon in his youth by the emperor Leopold, and was his competitor for the throne of Hungary, was put on the lift.

This negotiation was carried very far, and Poland

## 192

 THE HISTORYland was on the point of having three kings at one time. Prince Ragotfki not fucceeding, Peter thought to beftow the crown on Siniauiki, grand general of the republic ; a man of great power and interef, and head of a third party, that would neither acknowledge the dethroned king, nor the perfon elected by the other faction.

AmONGST all thofe troubles, there was a rumour of peace. Beffeval the French envoy to the court of Saxony interpofed, to bring about a reconciliation between Peter and the king of Sweden. The court of France were of opinion, that Charles, having no longer either the Ruffians or Poles to fight againft, might turn his arms againft the emperor Jofeph, who had difobliged him, and on whom he had even impofed feveral hard terms during his ftay in saxony. But Charles made anfwer, that he would treat with the Czar in the city of Mofcow. It was on this occafion that Peter faid, " My brother Charles wants to act the Alex. ander, but he thall not find a Darius in me"

The Ruffians however ftill continued in Poland, and were in the city of Warfaw, while the king whom Charles XII. had fet over the Poles was fcarcely acknowledged by that nation. In the mean time, Charles was enriching his army with the fpoils of Saxony.

AT length he began his march from Altranftadt $\ddagger$, with an army of forty five thoufand men; a force which it feemed impoffible for the Czar to

## OFRUSSIA.

make head againft, feeing he had been entirely defeated by eight thoufand Swedes at Narva.

It was in paffing by the walls of Drefden $\oint$, that Charles made that very extraordinary vifit to king Auguftus, which, as Norberg fays, 6 will ftrike pofterity with admiration." It was running a furprifing rifk, to put himfelf in the power of a prince whom he had deprived of his kingdom. From this place he continued his march through Silefia, and re-entered Poland.

This kingdom had been quite ravaged by war, ruined by factions, and over-run with all forts of miferies. Charles continued advancing with his army through the province of Maffovia, and took the worlt ways it was poffible for any perfon to chufe. The inhabitants had taken fhelter in the moraffes, and were refolved to make him pay dear for his paffage Six thoufand peafants difpatched an old man of their body to fpeak to him; this man, who was of a very extraordinary fize and figure, clad in white, and armed with two carabines, addreffed Charles; but as thofe who were in company with Charles did not very well underftand what he faid, they immediately killed him in the midft of his difcourfe, before the king's face. The peafants, highly provoked, immediately took up arms. The Swedes purfued them, and all they took they obliged to hang one another; the laft was compelled to put the rope about his own neck himfelf, and to be bis own executioner. All their
houles

## 194 THE HISTOBY

boufes were burnt to the ground. This fact is fully attefted by Norberg, who was an eve witnefs, and therefore cannot be contradicted, which muft fhock every one with horror who reads it.

Charles being arrived within a few leagues of Grodno in Lithuania $\ddagger$, received intelligence of the Czar's being there in perfon with a body of troops; upon which, without any deliberation, he takes only eight hundred ot his guards, and fets out for Grodno. A German officer, named Multels, who commanded a body of troops, pofted at one of the gates of the town, fuppofing when he faw Charles, that he was followed by his whole army, inftead of difputing the paffage with him, leaves the gate open, and runs away. The alarm being now fpread through the whole town, every perfon thought the whole Swedifh army already entered; the few Ruffians who made refiftance were killed by the Swedifh guards; and all the officers inform the Czar, that the victorious army were become mallers of the place. Upon this Peter retreats behind the ramparts, and Charles plants a guard of thirty men at the gate through which the Czar had jult before entered.

In this confufion, fome of the fathers belonging to the Jefuits college where Charles lodged, went in the night, and informed the Czar of the whole truth. Upon which, Peter returns into the town, and forces the Swedith guards. An engagement enfued in the ftreets, but the whole Sweditio army

## OFRUSSIA.

appearing in fight, the Czar is obliged to yield to fuperior numbers, and leaves the town in the hands of the vikior, who filled all Poland with confernation.

Charles had augmented his forces in Livonia and Finland, and Peter had good reafon to be afraid, not only for his conquefts on this fide, but alfo for thofe on the fide of Lithuania, alfo for his ancient territories, and even the city of Mofcow itfelf. It was therefore neceflary for him to provide for the fecurity of all thefe places, which lay at fuch a diftance from one another. Charles could not make any rapid conquefts to the eaftward of Lithuania in the depth of winter, and in a marfliy country, fubject to epidemical diforders, which had increafed by poverty and famine from Warfaw as far as Minfki. Peter polfed his troops to command all the paffes of the rivers, guarded all the important pofts, and did every thing in his power to hinder the marches of his enemy $t$, and afterwards haftened to put all things in a proper ftate of defence at Peteribuig.

Ihough Charles was victorious in Poland, he took nothing from the Czar ; but Peter, by employing his new fleet, in landing his forces in Finland, by the taking and difmantling the town of Borgau, and by taking a confiderable booty $t$, procured many real advantages to himfelf, and greatly diftreffed bis enemy.

Continual rains kept Charles a long time in
t April 8, x $708, \quad+$ May 22.
Vol. I.
K
Lithuania,

## 196 THE HISTORY

Lithuania, but he at length reached the little river of. Berezine, a few leagues from the Borifthenes. Nothing could withfand his victorious arm; he immediately threw a bridge over the river in fight of the Ruflians; beat the detachment that guarded the paffage, and got to Holozin on the Wabis, where the Czar had pofted a confiderable body of men to check the imperwous progrefs of the Swedes. The little river of Bibitfeb is only a brook in dry weather; but at this time it was fwelled by the rains to a deep and rapid flream. On the other fide was a morafs, behind which the Ruffians had thrown up an intrenchment for above a quarter of a league, defended by a large and deep ditch, and covered by a parapet lined with artillery. Nine regiments of horfe, and eleven of foot, were advantageoufly pofted in thefe lines, fo that the paffage of the tiver feemed very dangerous, if not impracticable.

The Swedes, according to the cuflom of war, got ready their pontons, and erected batteries to favour their paffage; but Charles, whofe impatience to engage would not let him brook the leaft delay, did not wait till the pontons were ready. Marfhal Schwerin, who ferved a long time under him, has affured me feveral times, that one day as they were about to engage, obferving his generals to be very bufy in concerting the neceflary difpofitions, faid tartly to them, "When will you be done with tuifing ?" and immediately advanced in perfon at the head of his guards, which he did particularly on this memorable day.

## OFRUSSIA.

He threw himfelf into the river, followed by his regiment of guards. Their numbers broke the impetuofity of the ftream, but the water was as high as their fhoulders, and they could make no ufe of their firelocks. Had the artillery of the parapet been but tolerably well ferved, or had the infantry but levelled their pieces in a proper manner, not a fingle $S$ wede would have efcaped.

The king, after wading the river \%, pafied the morafs on foot. As foon as the army had furmounted thefe obflacles within fight of the Ruffians, they drew up in order of battle, and attacked the Ruflian entrenchments feven times, and it was not till the feventh attack that the Ruffians gave way. By the accounts of Swedifh hiftorians, they took but twelve field pieces, and twenty four mortars.

It was therefore now plain, that the Czar had at laft fucceeded in difciplining his troops, and this victory of Holozin, though it added to Charles's glory, might have made him fenfible of the many dangers he mult expect to meet with in adventuring into fuch dittant countries, where his army could only advance in fmall bodies, through woods, moraffes, and where he would be obliged to fight every ftep of his way ; but the Swedes, being accuttomed to victory, neither were airaid of danger nor fatigue.

## 198 THEHISTORY



## CH A P. XVII.

Charles XII crofes the Borifthenes, penctrates in. to the Ukraine, but does not cencert bis meafures properly One of his armies is defeated by Peict the Great: be lefes bis tupply of provifions and amimunition : advances forward through a defert country. His adventures on the Ukraine.

## The year 1708.

1HARLES had now arrived on the banks of the Borifthenes, at a fmall town called Mohilow. Ihis was the important place where he was defermined whether he fiould direct bis march eaftward towards Mofcow, or fouthward towards the Ukraine His army, his friends, his enemes, all expected that he would direct his courfe immediately for the capical of Ruflia. Whatever way he took, Peter was following him from Smolen iko with a numerous army. No one expected that be would march towards the Ukraine: He was induced to take this frange refolution by Mzeppa, hetman of the Conlacks, an old man of feventy, and without children, who ought to bave thought only of ending his days in peace and quiet: a fenfe of gratitude fhould have tied bim to the Czar, to whom he was indebted for his prefent greatnefs ; but whether he had any real caufe of complaint againft that prince,
or that he was overcome with the luftre of Charles's exploits, or whether, in time, he thought to make himfelf independent, he betrayed his benefactor, and entered into a confpiracy with the king of Sweden, flattering himfelf with the hopes of the whole nation of Coffacks joining him in rebellion.

Charles made not the leaft doubt of fubduing the Ruffian empire, as foon as his troops fhould be joined by fo warlike a people as the Coflacks. Ma. zeppa was to furnifh him with what provifions, ammunition, and artillery he ftood in need of. Befides thefe powerful fuccours, he was to be joined by an army of fixteen or feventeen thoufand men out of Livonia, under the command of general Lewenhaupht, who was to bring with him a prodigious quantity of warlike ftores and provifions. Charles did not allow himfelf to think whether the Czar was within reach of attacking his army, and robbing him of thefe neceflary fupplies. He never informed himfelf whether Mazeppa was in a condition to oblerve his promifes; if he had credit $e$. nough to gain over a whole nation, who are generally ruled only by their own opiaion ; of whether his army was provided with fufficient refources in cafe of an accident; but imagined, if Mazeppa fhould prove deficient in abilities or fidelity, he might depend entirely upon the bravery of his troops and good fortune. His army then advanced beyond the Boriftienes towards the Deina: it was between thefe two rivers that he expected to meet with Mazeppa. Many difficulties, as bad roads,
and firmifhing parties of the Ruffians, made his march very difagreeable.
MENzicoff, at the head of fome horfe and foot $\xi$, attacked the king's advanced guard, threw them in. to diforder, and killed a number of his men. He loft a greater number of his own, but that did not difcourage him. Charles immediately haftened to the field of battle, and with fome difficulty repulfed the Ruflians, at the hazard of his own life, by engaging a party of dragoons, by whom he was furrounded. All this while Mazeppa did not arrive, and provifions began to grow fcarce. The $S$ wedifh foldiers were not difpirited, feeing their king flare with them in all their dangere, fatigues, and wants; but though they admired his courage, they could not refrain from being difpleafed with his conduct.

The orders which the king had fent to Lewenhaupt to march with all hafte, to join him with the neceffary fupplies, were retarded twelve days in their journey. This was a great lofs as circumflances then flood. However, Lewenhaupt at laft began his march. Peter allowed him to pais the Borifthenes; but as foon as his army was got between that river and the fmaller ones, which empty themfelves into it, he forded it after him, and attacked him with his united forces, which had followed in different corps at equal diftances from one another. This battle was fought between the Borifthenes and the Soffa $\ddagger$.

Prince

[^25]
## OFRUSSIA.

Prince Menzikoff was upon his return with the fame body of horfe, with which he had lately engaged Charles XII. General Baur followed him, and the Czar himfelf headed the flower of his army. The Swedes inagined they had to deal with an army of forty thoufand men, and this was believed for a long time: but my late memoirs inform me, that Peter had no more than twenty thoufand in that day's memorable battle, a number not much fuperior to that of the Swedes: but his vigour; his patience, his unwearied perfeverance, together with that of his troops, animated by his prefence, decided the fortune, not of that day only, but of the three fucceffive days, during which the battle was renewed at different times.

The Ruffians attacked firt the rear of the Swedifh army, near the village of Lefnau, from whence this battle borrows its name. This firft mock was bloody, without proving decifive $\oint$. Lewenhaupe retreated into a wood, and thereby faved his baggage. The next morning, when the Swedes were to be driven from the wood, the action was ftill more bloody, and more to the advantage of the Ruffians. Here it was that the Czar, reeing his troops in diforder, cried out to the rear-guard to fire upon the runaways, and even upon himfelf, if they faw him retreat cowardly. The Swedes were repulfed, but not thrown into confufion.

AT length a reinforcement of four thoufand dragoons arriving, he fell upon the Swedes a ibird

$$
\text { K } 4
$$

time, who retreated to a fmall town called Profpock, where they were again attacked; they then marched towards the Defna, the Ruffians ftill purfuing them; yet they were never broken, but loft upwards of eight thoufand men, feventeen pieces of cannon, and forty four colours : the Czar took fif. ty-fix-officers, and near nine hundied private men prifoners, and the great convoy of provifions and ammunition that were defigned for Charles's army, fell into the hands of the conqueror.

THis was the fitf time that the Czar in perfon gained a pitched battle againft an enemy who had diftinguifhed themfelves by fo many victories over his army; be proclaimed a general thankfgiving for hi victories, upon hearing that general $A$ praxin had gained an advantage in Ingria $\ddagger$, near Narva; an advantage which was not fo great as that of Lefnau; but this concurrence of fortunate events greatly raifed the hopes and courage of his troops. - Charles received this terrible news juft as he was ready to pafs the Defna in the Ukraine. Mazeppa now joined him ; but inftead of twenty thoufand men, and an immenfe quantity of provifions, which he was to have brought with him, he came with only two regiments, and appeared rather like a traitor applying for affiftance, than a prince, who was bringing powerful fuccours to his ally. This Coffack had indeed begun his march with near fixteen thoufand of his people, whom he made believe at their firf fetting out, that they were going againft

[^26]
## OFRUSSIA.

gainft the king of Sweden; that they wou'd have the glory of fopping that hero on this march, and that Peter would be eternally obliged to them for fo great a fervice.

But when they arrived near the Defna, he told his real defign. Thefe generous people received his propofal with indignation: they refufed to betray a monarch, againft whom they had no caufe of complaint, for the fake of a Swede, who had invaded their country, and who, after leaving it, would be no longer able to defend them, but muft abandon them to the fu y of the incenfed Ruffians, and of the Poles, once their mafters, and always their enemies : they accordingly returned home, and gave advice to the Czar of the defection of their chief. Maz ppa found himfelf left with only two regiments, the officers of which were in his own pay.

He was fill mafter of fome frong fortreffes in the Ukraine, and in particular of Bathurin, the place of his refidence, looked upon as the capis 1 of the Coffacks: it is fituated near fome foreits on the Defna, at a great diftance from the place where Peter had defeated general Lewenhaupt. There were always fome Ruflian regiments quartered in thefe parts. The Czar detached prince Menzikoff, wha got thither by round about marches. Charles could not fecure all the paffes; he did not fo much as know them all, and had neglected to make him. felf malter of the important polt of the Starowduub, which leads direetly to Bathurin, acrofs a foreft of feven or eight leagues, through which the Defna K 5
takes
takes its courfe Peter had always the adrantage of him, by their better knowledge of the country.

Menzicoff and the pince Galitzin, who had accompanied him, eafily mare their paffage good $f$, and prefented themfelves before the town of Ba thurin, which furrendered almoft without refift ance, was plundered and reduced to afhes. The Ruffians made themfelves mafters of a large maga. zine deftined for the ufe of the king of Sweden, and of all Mazeppa's treafures. The Coffacks chofe another hetman, named Skoropafky, who was approved by the Czar, and to make the people more fenfible of the enormous crime of treafon, by a ftriking example of juftice, the archbifhop of Kiow of, and two other prelates, were ordered to excommunicate Mazeppa publicly; after which be was hanged in effigy, and fome of his accomplices were broken upon the wheel.

Charles XII, notwithftanding thefe loffes, was flill at the head of about twenty-five or twenty-feven thoufand Swedes, who were joined by the remains of Lewenhaupt's army, and the addition of between two and three thoufand men, whom Mazeppa bad brought with him, and fill infatuated with the fame miffaken opinion of all the Ukraine declaring for him, paffed the Defna *, at fome diflance from Bathurin, and near the Bonthenes, notwithftanding be was environed with the Czar's troops; part of whom purfued the rear of his army, while arother part lined the oppofite fide of the river to oppofe his paffage.

$$
\ddagger \text { Nov. 14. x708. §Nov. } 22 \text {. Nov, 25, 1708, }
$$

## OF RUSSIA. 205

He purfued his march through a defert country, the villages being all deftroyed and burnt. The cold was fo prodigioufly piereing at the beginning of December, that in one of his marches, near two thoufand of his men perifhed before his eyes; $\mathrm{Pe}-$ ter's troops did not fuffer fo much, being better fupplied with cloaths and other neceffaries, whereas Charles's army, being almolt naked, was more expofed to the inclemency of the weather.

In this deplorable fituation, count Piper, Charles's chanceller, who always gave his matter good advice, conjured him to bait, and pals at leaft the fevereft part of the winter in a fmall town of the Ukraine, called Romna, where be might entrench himfelf, and get fome provilions by the help of Mazeppa; but Charles replied, that "s it was below his dignity to fhut himfelf up in a town." Piper then intreated him to repafs the Defna and the Borifthenes, to return back into Poland, to put his troops into winter-quarters, of which they ftood fo much in need, to make ufe of the Polifh cavalry, which was abfolutely neceffary, to fupport the king he had raifed to the crown, and to awe the partifans of Augultus, who began already to raife their drooping heads. Charles anfwered him again, "that this would be flying before the Czar, that the feaion would grow milder, and that he muft reduce the Ukraine, and march on to Mofcow."

Вотн armies remained fome weeks inactive $\oint$, K 0
on
$\ddagger$ This is acknowledged by the chaplain Norberg, tom, II. p. 263.

## 206 THE HISTORY

on account of the cold, in the month of Jantuary 1709 ; but, as foon as the troops were able to make ufe of their arms, Charles attacked all the fmall pofts that he found in his way. He was obliged to fend parties on every fide in fearch of provifions ; that is to fay, to fcour the country twenty leagues round, and rob all the peafants of their neceffary fubfiftence. Peter, with great compofure, kept a frict eye upon all his motions, and fuffered the Swedifh army to moulder away by degrees.

IT is impoffible for the reader to trace the Swedes in their march through thefe defolate countries; feveral of the rivers which they croffed are not to be found in maps: we muft not fuppofe, that geographers are as well acquainted with thefe countries, as we are with Italy, France, and Germany, Gecgraphy is, of all the liberal arts, that which fill flands the moft in need of improvement; and the ambition of princes has hitherto , been at more pains in defolating the face of the globe, than in giving a defcription of it

We muf content ourfelves then with knowing, that Charles criffed the Ukraine in the month of February, burning all the villages where-ever he came, that had not been laid in afhes by the Ruf. fians. He, advancing fouth eaft, came to thofe fandy deferts, bordered by mountains, that feparate the Nogay Fartars from the Cofficks. To the eaftward of thefe mountains, are the altars of Alexander. Charles was now on the other fide of the Ukraine, in the road that the Tartars take to Ruflia;
and when he penetrated thus far, he was obliged to return back again to procure fubfiltence : the inhabitants, having retired with all their cattle into their dens and lurking places, would fometimes defend their fubfiftence againft the foldiers, who came to deprive them of it. Such of thefe poor wretches who could be found, were put to death, agreeable to what are fallly called the rights of war I cannot here forbear tranfcribing a few lines from Norberg. "As an inftance, fays he, of the king's regard to juftice, I thall infert a note, which he wrote with his own hand to colonel Heilmen."

## " Colonel,

"I am very well pleafed that you have taken thefe peafants, who carried off a swedifh foldier. As foon as they are convicted of the crime, let them be punifhed with death, according to the exigency of the cafe.

Charles, and lower down, Budis." SUCH are the fentiments of juftice and humanity fhewn by a king's confeffor; but had the peafants of the Ukraine had it in their power to hang the regimented peafants of Eaft Gothland, who thought they had a ight to come fo far to plun ter them, their wives, and families, would not the confeffors and chaplains of thee Ukrainers have had equal rea on to extol their juftice?

Mazefpa had, for a confiderable time, been in treaty with the Zoporavians, who live about the two thoies of the Borithenes, and of whom part inhabir the iflands firuated on that river. It is this divition that forms the nation, of whom mention

## 208

 THE HISTORYhas already been made in the firft chapter of this hiftory, and who having neither wives nor families, fubfift entirely by robbery During the winter they heap up poovifions in their iflands, which they afterwards go and fell in the fummer, in the little town of Pultowa; the eft dwell in fmall hamlets, to the right and left of this river. They all together chufe a particular hetman, and this hetman is fub:ordinate to him of the Ukraine. The perfon at that time at the head of the Zaporavians had an interview with Mazeppa; and thefe two barbarians had each of them an horfe's tail and a club born before him, as enfigns of honour.

In order to fliew what this hetman of the Zaporavians, and his fubjects, were, I think it not unworthy of hiftory, to relate the manner in which this treaty was concluded. Mazeppa gave a great feaft to the betman of the Zaporavians, and his principal officers, who were all ferved in plate. As foon as thefe chiefs had made themfelves drunk with brandy, they took an oath (without ftirring from the table) upon the evangelifts, to fupply Charles with men and provifions; atter which they carried off all the plate and other table-furniture. Mazeppa's fleward ran after them, and remonftrated, that fuch behaviour ill-fuited with the doctrine of the goipels on which they had fo lately fworn. Some of Mazeppa's domeflicks were for taking the plate away by force: but the Zaporavians went in a body to complain to Mazeppa, of the unparalleled affrot offered to fuch brave fellows, and demanded to have the fteward delivered up to them, that

## OFRUSSIA.

they might punifh him according to law. This was accordingly complied with, and the Zaporavians, according to law, thed this poor man lrom one to another like a foot ball, and afterwards plunged a knile into his heart.

SUCH were the new allies that Charles XII, was obliged to receive, part of whom he formed into a regiment of two thoufand men; the remainder marched in feparate bodies againft the Coffack and Calmucks of the Czar's party, that were ftationed about that diftrict.

Ihe little town of Pultowa, with which thofe Zaporavians carry on a trade, abounded with provitions, and might have ferved Charles for a place of arms. It is fituated on the river Workflaw, near a chain of mountains, which command it on the north-fide To the ealtward is a vaft defart. The weftern part is the moft fruitful, and the beft peopled The Worfklaw runs into the Boritthenes, about fifteen leagues lower down. From Pultowa, you pafs northward, through the defles which communicate with the road to Mofcow, a paffage ufed by the Tartars. It is very difficult of accefs, and the precautions taken by the Czar had rendered it almoft unpaffable; but nothing appeared impoifible to Charles, and he depended upon marching to Mofcow, as foon as he had made himfelf mafter of Pultowa. With this view he laid fiege to that town in the beginning of May.

## 210

 THEHISTORY

C H A P. XVIII.

Battle of Pultowa.

The year 1709.

1T was here that Peter expected him. He had difpofed the feveral bodies of his army at convenient diftances for joining each other, and marching all together againft the befiegers: he had vifited the countries which furround the Ukraine; namely, the duchy of Severia, watered by the Defna, already famous for his late victory; the country of Bolcho, from which the Occa takes its fource; the defarts and mountains leading to the Palus $\mathrm{M} x$ otis; and laft of all, he had been in the neighbourhood of Afoph, where he caufed the harbour to be cleanfed, veffels to be built, and the citadel of 「aganroc to be fortified. Thus had he employed the time that paffed between the battles of Lefnau and Pultowa; in preparing for the defence of his dominions. As foon as he knew hat city was befieged, he affembled all his forces: his cavalry, dragoons, infantry, Coffacks, and Calmucks, advanced from twenty different places. Nothing was wanting in his army; large cannon, field-pieces, ammunition of all forts, piovifions, and even medicines for the fick : in this refpect he was greatly fuperior to his rival.

## OF RUSSIA.

On the fifteenth day of June 1700 , he appeared before Pultowa with an army of about fixty thoufand effective men. The river Worfklaw was between him and Charles. The befiegers were encamped on the north-weft fide of that river, the Ruffians on the fouth-ealt.

Peter afcends the river above the town, fixes the barges, marches over with his whole force, and draws a long line of intrenchments $t$, which were begun and compleated in one night in the face of the enemy. Charles might then eafily judge, whether the perfon whom be fo much defpifed, and whom he thought of dethroning at Mofcow, underftood the art of war. This difpofition being made, Peter pofted his horfe between two woods, and covered it with feveral redoubts, lined with artillery. Having thus taken all neceflary precautions, he went to reconnoitre the enemy's camp in order to form the attack $\ddagger$

This battle was to decide the fate of Ruffia, Poland, and Sweden, and of two monarchs, on whom the eyes of all Europe were fixed The greateft part of thofe nations who were atcentive to thefe important concerns, were equally ignorant of the place where thefe two princes were, and of their fituation ; but knowing that Charles XII, bad left Saxony, at the head ot a victorious army, and that he was driving his enemy every where before him, they no longer doubted that he would at length entirely crufh him; and that as he had already

[^27]given laws to Denmark, Poland, and Germany, he would dictare conditions of peace in the Kremlin of Mofcow, and make a new Czar, as he had already made a new king of Poland. I have feen letters from feveral public minifters to their refpective courts, confirming this general opinion.

The rifk was far from being equal between thefe two great rivals. If Charles loft a life, which he had fo often, and foolifhly expofed, there would only have been one hero lefs in the world. The provinces of the Ukraine, the frontiers of Lithuania and Ruffia, would then be delivered from their calamities. Poland would, together with her tranquillity, recover her lawful king, who had been Jately reconciled to the Czar his benefactor; and lafty, Sweden, tho' exhautted of men and money, might find motives of confolation under her heavy loffes.

BUT if the Czar had perighed, the public would have been robbed of all thofe ufeful undertakings which he had concerted and purfued for the benefit of mankind ; and Ruffia would have relapfed into the woful flate from which the had fo lately been brought.

There had already been fome fmall fkirmifhes between the detached parties of Swedes and Ruffians, under the walls of Pultowa. In one of thefe Chatles had been wounded with a fhot from a carabine $f$, which had fhattered the bones of his heel. He underwent feveral painful operations, which he

## OFRUSS1A.

bore with his ufual fortitude, but was confined to his bed for fome days. In this fituation he was informed, that Peter defigned to attack him. His notions of glory would not fuffer him to wait to be attacked in his entienchments: accordingly he gave orders for drawing out his troops, and was carried himfelf in a litter. Peter the Great acknowledges, in his journal, that the Swedes attacked the redoubts that covered his cavalry, with fuch obftinate valour, that, in fpite of the ftrongeft refiftance from his cannon, they made themfelves mafters of two redoubts. Some writers fay, that when the swedifh infantry were in poffeflion of the two redoubts, they thought the day their own, and began to cry out Victory. Norberg the chaplain, who was at fome great diftance from the field of battle, amongft the baggage, pretends, that this is a calumny; but whether the Swedes cried out victory or not, it is certain they were not victorious. The fire from the other redoubts was kept up without abating, and the refiftance made on every part was as firm as the attack of their affailants was vigorous. They did not make one irregular movement ; the Czar drew up his army before the entrenchments with great readinefs and order.

THE battle now became general. Peter acted as major general ; Baur commanded the right wing, Menzikoff the left, and Scheremetow the center. The action lafted two hours; Charles with a piftol in his hand went from rank to rank, carried by his drabans in a litter, one of whom was killed by a cannon-ball, and at the fame time the litter was
thattered in pieces. He then ordered his men to carry him upon pikes; for it would have been difficult in fo bloody an engagement, let Norberg fay as he pleafes, to find a frefh litter ready made. Peter received feveral fhot in his cloaths and his hat ; both princes were in the midft of the fire, during the whole action. At length, after two hours defperate fighting, the Swedes gave way on all fides, and rell into confufion, fo that Charles was obliged to fly with precipitation before Peter, whom he had hitherto held in great contempt. This very hero, who was not able to mount his faddle during the battle, now fled for his life on horle-back; neceffity gave him ftrength in his retreat ; he fuffered the moft excruciating pain, which was increafed by the mortifying reflection of being vanquifhed, without hopes of ever again being able to look his enemy in the face. The Ruffians reckoned nine thou fand two hundred and twenty four Swedes left dead on the field of battle, and between two and three thoufand made prifoners in the action, which were chiefly cavalry.

Charles, in his flight, was attended only by fourteen thoufand men, a few field-pieces, and very fmall quantity of provifions and ammunition. He directed his march fouthward, towards the Borifthenes, between the rivers Worfklaw and sol $\%$, in the country of the Zaporavians. Beyond the Borithenes are large defarts, which lead to the frontiers of Iurky. Norberg affirms, that the victors

[^28]
## OFRUSSIA.

durft not purfue Charles; yet be acknowledges, that Menzikoff appeared on the adjoining eminences, with ten thoufand horfe, and a confiderable train of artillery $t$, while the king was paffing the Borifthenes.

Fourteen thoufand Swedes furrendered themfelves prifoners of war to thefe ten thoufand Rufians; and Lewenhaupt, who commanded them, figned the fatal capitulation, by which he gave up thofe Zaporavians who had engaged in the fervice of his mafter, and were then in the flying army. The chief perfons taken prifoners in the battle, and by the capitulation, were count Piper, the firt minifter, with two fecretaries of flate, and two of the cabinet, field-marfhal Renfchild, the generals Lewenhaupt, Slippembac, Rozen, Stakelber, Creutz, and Hamilton, and three general aid-de-camps, the auditor general of the army, fifty-nine ftaff-officers, five colonels, among whom was the prince of Wirtemberg, fixteen thoufand nine hundred and forty two private men and fubaltern officers; in fine, reckoning the king's domeftics, and other attendants on the army, the conqueror took no lefs than eighteen thoufand feven hundred and forty fix prifoners; and, if we add nine thoufand two hundred and twenty four flain in the battle, and near two thoufand men that paffed the Borifthenes in the king's retinue, it appears plainly, that he had no lefs than twenty feven thoufand effective men under his command on that memorable day $\neq$.

+ July 121709.
$\ddagger$ The memoirs of Peter the Great, by the pretended boyar Iwan
Charles
$2: 6$ THE HISTORY
Charles had begun his march from Saxony with forty-five thoufand men; Lewenhaupt had brought upwards of fixteen thoufand from Livonia, and now this once flourifhing and powerful army was no more; he loft in the moraffes and on the march, the whole of his artillery, except eighteen brafs cannon, two haubitzers, and twelve mortars; and with fo inconfiderable a force, he had undertaken the fiege of Pultowa, and had attacked an army provided with a formidable train of artillery. Therefore his accufation is juf, of having thewn more courage than prudence, after departing from Germany. On the fide of the Ruffians there were only fifty two officers, and one thoufand two hundred common men killed; which makes it appear that Peter made a better difpofition of his troops than Charles, and that the fire of the Ruffians was infinitely fuperior to that of the Swedes.

We find, in the memoirs of a foreign minifter to the court of Ruffia, that Peter, on hearing of Charles's defign to take refuge in Turky, wrote a friendly letter to him, defiring him not to take fo defperate a refolution, but rather to believe his facred word, and truft himfelf in hi hands, than in thofe of the natural enemy of Chriftendom. He gave him, at the fame time, his word of honour not to detain him prifoner, but that all their differences fhould be terminated by a reafonable peace. Neltefuranoy, printed at Amicrdam in 5739 , fay, that the king of Sweden, before he paffed the Borithenes, fent a ge eral officer with propofals of peace to the Czar The four volumes of thefe memoirs are cither a collection of untruths and abfurdities, or compilations from commorl hews papers.

This letter was fent by an exprefs as far as the river Bug, which feparates the defarts of the Ukraine from the Grand Seignior's dominions. As the meffenger did not reach that place, till Charles had entered Turky, he brought back the letter to his mafter. The fame minifter adds further, that he had this account from the very perfon charged with the letter $\ddagger$. This anecdote is not altogether improbable, but I do not meet with it in Peter's journals, or in any of the memorials trufted to my care. What is of greater importance with refpect to this battle, was, its being the only one of a great number that have drenched the earth with blood, that inflead of producing only deftruction, has proved beneficial to mankind, fince by means of this, it gave the Czar an opportunity of civilizing fo confiderable a part of the world.

There have been upwards of two hundred pitched battles fought in Europe fince the beginning of this century, to the prefent year. The moft fignal, and the moft bloody victories, have produced no other confequences, than the reduction of a few provinces, yielded afterwards by treaties, and retaken again by other battles. Armies of an hundred thoufand men have often engaged each other in the field; but the moft violent efforts have been attended only with momentary fucceffes : the molt trivial caufes have been productive of the greateft effects. There is no example in modern hiftory of any war that has compenfated by a greater good for

[^29]
## 218 THE HISTORY

the many evils it has occafioned; for the happinefs of the greateft empire on the earth has refulted from the battle of Pultowa.


## C H A P. XIX.

Confequences of the battle of Pultowa. Charles XII. takes refuge among the Turks. Auguftus, whom be had dethroned, recovers, bis dominions. Conquefls of Peter the Great.

The years 1709 and 1710.

AF TER the battle and purfuit was over, the chief prifoners of rank were prefented to the conqueror, who ordered their fwords to be returned, and invited them to dine with him. It was a well known truth, that, on drinking to the officers, he faid, "To the health of my maflers in the art of war." However. moft of his mafters, particularly the fubaltern officers, and all the private foldiers, were foon afterwards fent into Siberia. There was no cartel eftablifhed for exchange of prifoners between the Ruflians and Swedes; the Czar indeed had prupofed one before the fiege of Pultowa, but Charles rejected the offer, and his troops were in every thing the victims of his inflexible baughtinefs of temper.

IT was this unwarrantable obflinacy that occafi-
oned all the misfortunes of Charles in Turky, and a feries of adventures more becoming a Don Quixote than a wife or prudent king; for as foon as he arrived at Bender, he was advifed to write to the Grand Vifier, as is the cuftom among the Turks; but this he thought would be demeaning himfelf too far. The like obftinacy made him fall out with all the minifters of the Porte one after another; in fhort, he knew not how to accommodate himfelf either to times or places.

The firft news of the battle of Pultowa produeed a general revolution in Poland, Saxony, Sweden, and Silefia. Charles, while all powerful in thofe parts, had forced the emperor Jofeph to take an hundred and five churches from the Catholics in favour of the Silefians of the confeffion of Augfburg. The Catholics there no fooner received news of the defeat of Charles, than they repoffefled themfelves of all the Lutheran temples. The Saxons now thought of nothing but being revenged for the extortions of a conqueror, who had robbed them, according to their own account, of twenty three millions of crowns.

The king of Poland their elector immediately protefted againft the abdication that had been extorted from him *, and being now reconciled to the Czar, he ufed all poffible means to re-afcend the Polifh throne. Sweden, overwhelmed with confternation, thought their king for a long time

$$
\text { * Aug. s. } 170 \mathrm{~g} .
$$

## VoL. I.

L.
dead,

## THE HISTORY

dead, and in this uncertainty the fenate knew not what refolution to come to.

Peter in the nican time determined to make the beft ufe of his vietory, and therefore difpatched marfhal Scheremetow with an army into Livonia, on the frontiers of which province that general had fo often been victotious. Prince Menzikoff was fent in hafte with a numerous body of cavalry to fecond the few troops left in Poland, and to encourage the nobles who were in the intereft of Augullus, to drive out his competitor, who was now confidered as no better than a rebel, and to difperfe a body of Swedes and troops that were ftill in that kingdom under the command of general Craffau.

Peter foon atter fets out in perfon, marches through the province of Kiow, and the palatinates of Chelm and Upper Volhinia, and at length arrives at Lublin, where he concerts meafures with the general of Lithuania. He then reviews the crown troop, who all take the oath of allegiance to king Auguftus; from thence he proceeds to Warfaw, and at Thorn enjoyed the mof glorious of all triumphs *, that of receiving the thanks of a king, whom he had reftored. Here it was that he concluded a treaty againlt Sweden $t$, with the kings of Denmark, Poland, and Pruffia; in which it was refolved to recover from Charles all the conquefts of Guftavus Adolphus. Peter revived the ancient pretenfions of the Czars to Livonia, Ingria, Carelia, and part of Finland; Denmark laid claim

[^30]
## OFRUSSIA.

to Scania, and the king of Pruffia to Pomerania. Thus had Charles XII by his unfuccelsful valour, fhook the noble edifice that had been erected by the fucceisful bravery of Guftavus Adolphus. The Polifh nobility came in on all fides to renew their oaths to their king, or to alk pardon for having deferted him; and almoft the whole kingdom acknowledged Peter for its protector.

So unexpected a revolution, with the fubfequent treaties, made Staniflaus unable to make any fur* ther refiftance, and therefore refolved on refigning the crown, if the republic required it.

Peter having concerted all the neceffary meafures with the king of Poland, and ratified the trea* ty with Denmark, pofted away to finifh his negotio ation with the king of Pruffia. It was not common for fovereign princes to perform the function of their own ambaffidors. Peter was the firft who introduced this cuftom, but few have followed his example The electior of Brandenburg, the firit king of Pruffia, had a conference with the Czar at Marenverder, a fmall town fituated in the weitern part of Pomerania, built by the old Teutonic knights, and included in the limits of Pruffis, lately made a kingdom. This country was but poor, and of a mall extent; but its new king, whenever he made a tour, difplayed the utmoft magnificence. He had received Czar Peter with great fplendor at his firft paffing through his dominions, when that prince left his empire to improve himfelf among foreigners. But he received the conqueror of Charles XII. in a ftill more pompous manner. Pea
ter for this time concluded only a defenfive treaty with him *, which afterwards, however, completed the ryin of Sweden.

Peter loft no time, and having difpatched all his negotiations in a much fhorter time than ambaffadors commonly do, joins his army then before Riga, the capital of Livonia. He began by bombarding the place, and fired off the three firft bomos himfelft; then changed the fiege into a blackade, and being well affured, that Riga could not bold out, he repaired to Peterfburg, to view and forward the works carrying on there, the new buildings, and finifing of his fleet; and having laid the keel of a fhip of fifty-four guns, with his own hands, he returned to Mofcow $\ddagger$. Here he amufed himelf with affifing in the preparations for the tri-umpbal-entry, which he exhibited in that capital. He directed every thing relating to that fefo tival, and was himfelf the principal contriver and manager.

The year 1710 was begun with this folemnity, fo neceffary to his fubjects, whom it infpired with notions of grandeur, and was highly delightful to every one who had been afraid of feeing the Swedes enter as conquerors, over whom they were now victorious. Seven magnificent arches were built, under which paffed the artillery, ftandards, and colours of the enemy, with all the officers, generals, and minifters, who had been taken prifoners; all moved in proceflion on foot, amidft the ringing

## OFRUSSIA.

of bells, the found of trumpets, the difcharge of an hundred pieces of cannon, and the acclamations of an innumerable concourfe of people, whofe voices rent the air The proceflion wa clofed by the victorious army, with the generals at its head on horfeback; and Peter, who marched in his rank of major general, brought up the rear. At each triumphal arch flood the deputies of the feveral orders of the ftate; and at the laft was a chofen troop of young gentlemen, the fons of boyars, in Ro nan habits, who prefented their victorious monarch with a laurel crown.

Гhis public feftival was followed by another ceremony, which proved no lefs fatisfactory than the former. In the year f:03 happened an accitent the more difagreeable to Peter, as his arms-were at that time unfuccefsful Mattheof his ambalfador to the court of London, having had his audience o: leave of Queen Anne, was arielled for debt at the fuit of come Englifh merchants, and carried before a juitice of the peace to give fecurity for the monies he owed there. The merchants in filted that the laws of commerce ought to prevail before the privileges of foreign minifters; the Czar's ambaffador, and with him all the public.minifters, protefted againtt this proceeding, alledging, that their perfons ought to be always inviolable. The Czar wrote to Queen inne, demanding fatiffaction for the infult offered him in the perion of his ambaffador

BUT the queen had it not in her power to obL 3
lige

## 224

 THE HISTOBYlige him, becaufe, by the laws of England, tradefo men were allowed to profecute their debtors, and there was no law that exempted public minifers from fuch profecution. The murder of Patkul the Czar's ambaffador, who had been executed the year before by the orders of Charles XII, bad emboldened the Englifh to thew little regard to a character which had been fo cruelly profaned. The other public minifters then refiding at the court of London, were obliged to be bound for the Czar's ambaffador ; and at length, all the queen could do in his favour, was to prevail on her parliament to pafs an act, by which no one for the future could arreft an ambaflador for debr; but after the battle of Puitowa the Englifh court shought proper to give more public fatisfaction to the Czar.

The queen made by a formal embaffy an excufe for what had pafled t. Mr. Whitworth, the perfon charged with this commiffion, began th is harangue with the following words, "Moft high and mighty Emperor." He told the Czar, that the perfon who had prefumed to arreft his ambaffador had been imprifoned, and rendered infamous. There was no truth in all this, but it was fufficient that he faid fo; and the title of Emperor, which the queen had not given Peter before the battle of Pultowa, plainly fhewed of what confequence be was looked on in Lurope.

THis title had been already granted him in HOl

## OFRUS SIA.

land, not only by thofe who had been his fellowe workmen in the dock-yards at Saardam, and feemed to intereft themfelves moft in his glory, but likewife by the principal perfons in the ftate, who unanimoufly ftiled him Enperor, and made public rejoicings for his victory, even in the prefence of the Swedifh minifter.

THE great reputation which he had acquired by his victory of Iultowa, was ftill further encreafed by his manner of improving it. Firf, he laid fiege to Elbing, a Hanfe town of Regal Pruffia in Poland, where the Swedes had ftill a garrifon. The Ruffians mounted the walls, entered the town, and the garrifon furrendered prifoners of war $\dagger$. This was one of the beft magazines belonging to Charles XII. The conquerors found therein one hundred and eighty three brafs cannon, and one hundred and fitty-feven mortars After the reduction of Elbing $\underset{\tau}{ \pm}$, Peter immediately baftened from Mofcow to Peterfburg: no fooner was he arrived at this latter place than he took 隹ipping under his new fortiefs of Cronflot, fcours the coafts of Carelia, and notwithftanding a violent form, arrives with bis fleet fately before Wyburg, the capital of Carelia in Finlandi; while his land-forces advanced over the frozen moraffes, and in a fort time the capital of Livonia is clofely blockaded $\$$; and after a breach was made in the walls, Wyburg furrendered, and the garrifon, confifting of four thoufand men, capitulated, but did not receive the honours

[^31]
## 226

 THE HISTORYof war, being made prifoners notwithfanding the capitulation. Peter complained of the enemy for having made feveral infractions of this kind, and promifed to fet thefe troops at liberty, as foon as he fhould receive fatisfaction from the Swedes. On this occafion the king of Sweden was to be confulted, who continued as inflexible as ever; and thofe foldiers, whom be might have fet free, remained in captivity. Thus king William III. in 6.5 , arrefted marfhal Boufflers, notwithftanding the capitulation of Namur. There have been feveral inftances of thefe violations of treaties; but it is to be wifhed there never had been any.

AFTER the taking of this capital, the blockade of Riga was changed into a regular fege, and puff. ed on with vigour. They were obliged to break the ice on the river Dwina, which waters the north of the city walls. An epidemical diftemper, which had raged fome time in thofe parts, now got among the foldiers, and carried off nine thoufand; yet the fiege was not in the leaft abated. The garrifon at laft capitulated, and were allowed the honours of wat $\S$, but it was agreed by the capitulation, that all the Livonian officers and foldiers fhould inlift into the Ruffian fervice, as natives of a country that had been difmembered from that empire, and ufurped by the anceftors of Charles XII. But the Livonians were reftored to the privileges, of which his father had Itript them, and all the officers entered into the

## OF R U S S I A.

Czar's fervice. This was the moft noble vengeance that Peter was capable of taking for the murder of his ambaflador Patkul, a Livonian, who had been put to death, for defending thofe privileges. The garrifon confited of five thoufand men. A fhort. time afterwards, the citadal of Dunamund was taken, and the befiegers found in the city and fort above eight hundred pieces of artillery.

Petrr now wanted nothing to make himfelf entirely mafter of the province of Carelia, but the poffefion of the Arong city of Kexholm, buile on an ifland in the lake of Ladoga, and deemed impregnable; it was bombarded foon after, and furrendered in a fhort time*. The ifland of Oefel in the fea, bordering upon the north of Livonia, was fubdued with the fame rapidity $\dagger$.

UN ste fide of Eftonia, a province of Livonia, towards the north, and on the gulph of Finland, are the towns of Pernau and Revel : by the reduc. tion of thefe Peter compleated the conqueft of all Livonia, Pernau furrendered after a fiege of a few days $\ddagger$, and Revel capiulated without waiting to have a fingle cannon fired againft it $\delta$, but the befieged ound means to elude the conqueror, at the very time they were furrendering themielves prifoners of war: for fome Swedifh fhips having anchored in the road, under favour of the night, the garrifon and moft of the citizens embarked on board, and when the befiegers entered the town,

[^32]they

## 228 THE HISTORY

they were furprifed to find it deferted. When Charles XII gained the vietory of Narva, little did he expect that his troops would one day be driven to ufe fuch fratagems.

Is Poland, Staniflaus finding his army entirely rained, took fhelter in Pomerania, which fill belonged to Charles XII. Auguftus refumed the government, and it was difficult io decide who had acquired moft glory, Charles in dethroning him, or Peter in refloring him to his crown.

The fubjects of the king of sweden were fill more unfortunate than that monarch himfelf. The eontagicus diftemper, which had made fuch havock over Livonia, p.ffed from thence into Sweden; where, in the city of Stockholm, it fwept away thirty thourand perfons; it likewife defolated the provinces already almoft depopulated; for during the fpace of ten years fucceffively, moft of the able-bodied men had quitted th ir country to follow their mafter, and perifhed in foreign countries.

Charles's bad fortune purfued him alfo in Pomerania. His troops having come hither from Po land, to the number of eleven thoufand; the Czar, the kings of Denmark and Pruffia, the elector of Hanover, and the duke of Holttein, joined together to render this army ufelefs, and to oblige general Craffau, who commanded it, to fubmit to a neutrality. The regency of Stockholm hearing no news of their king, and dittreffed by the mortality that raged in that city, were glad to fign this neutrality, which promiled to deliver one of its pro-
vinces at leaft from the horrors of war. The emperor of Germany favoured this extaordinary convention, by which it was ft pulated, that the Swedifh army then in Pomerania fhould not march from thence to affift their monarch in any other part of the world; nay, it was furthermore refolved in the German empire, to raife an army to fee this moft extraordinary treaty executed. The reafon of this was, that the emperor of Germany, who was then at war with France, was in hopes to engage the Swedifh army to enter into his fervice. This whole negotiation was carried on while Peter was fubduing Livonia, Eftonia and Carelia.

Charles XII. who was all this time at Bender, putting every ftratagem in execution to engage the divan to declare war againft the Czar , received this news as one of the fevereft blows that could happen him: he could not bear that the fenate of Stockholm fhould pretend to tie up the hands of his army; and it was on this occafion that he wrote them word, that he would fend them one of his boots to govern them.

THE Danes were now making preparations to invade Sweden; fo that every nation in Europe was engaged in war. Spain, Portugal, Italy, France, Germany, Holland, and England, were contending for the dominions left by Charles II. of Spain; and the whole north was up in arms aganit Charles XII. There wanted only a quarrel with the Ottoman empire, for every village in

## 230 THE HISTORY, \&c.

Europe to be expofed to the ravages of war. This quarrel happened through the jealousy of the Turks foo after, when Peter had got to the top of his glory.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

> Prog करुप

$$
\begin{gathered}
\text { * } \begin{array}{c}
D K 131 \\
V 913 \\
1778
\end{array} ~
\end{gathered}
$$

BHG7595
(2)


[^0]:    * My duts obliging me to caufe it to be printed, I have taken the liberty to fpare from the cyes of the reader fome too honourable cerias, Vol. 1.

[^1]:    * Memoirs of Strahlemberg, confirmed by thofe fent me from Raffia.

[^2]:    $\dagger$ Memoirs fent from Retersburg.

[^3]:    * Memoirs fent from Petersburg.

[^4]:    § In the Ruman language Tobulky,

[^5]:    + Sone pronounce it Romano.

[^6]:    * Extracted wholly from the memoirs fent from Mofoow and Pctersburg.

[^7]:    * Memoirs of Petersburg and Mofcow.

[^8]:    * General Le Fort's MSS.

[^9]:    * 1694. 

    $\ddagger$ Or scheremetoff.

[^10]:    $\ddagger$ General Le Fort's MSS.

[^11]:    $\dagger$ Le Fort's MSS。

[^12]:    $\dagger$ September 1698.

[^13]:    $\uparrow$ Memoirs of captain Perry the engineer, employed by Peter the Greit in Rufia, and MSS, of Le Fort.
    $\ddagger$ MSS, of Le Fort.

[^14]:    \$ Sept. roth 1693. It is to be obferved that I always follow the new flyle in my dates.

[^15]:    *Sept. 1700. + Nov. 18.
    \& See the hiftory of Charles XII.

[^16]:    + Vol I p 432 of the nto edition printed at the Hague.
    $\ddagger$ The chaplain Norberg pretends, that, immediately after the battle of Nar va, the Grand Sigmor wrote a letter of congratulation to the King of Sweden, in thefe terms, "The fultan Baffa, by the grace

[^17]:    " of God, to Charles XII, \&c." The letcer was dated from the aera of the creation of the world.
    $\dagger$ This prayer is printed in moft of the journals and hitorical pieces of thefe times, It is inferted in the hitory of Charles XII. king of Sweden.

[^18]:    \# This chapter, and the following, are taken entirely from the jourDal of Peter the Great, fent me trom Pciersburg.

[^19]:    - December 1\%, 1702.

[^20]:    $\ddagger$ Taken from the journal of Peter the Great,

[^21]:    *March 30, 1703.

    + May 22: $17{ }^{\circ} \mathrm{O}$.

[^22]:    $\ddagger$ Peterfburg was founded on Whitfunday, May 27. 1703.

[^23]:    - Nor s. 2703.
    $\dagger$ Jan. 1704.
    12
    UPON

[^24]:    *Oef, : 706

[^25]:    § Sept. 11. 1908. $\ddagger$ In the Ruflian language Soeza,

[^26]:    $\ddagger$ Sept. 17. 1708.

[^27]:    $\dagger$ June 3, 1709.

    ## $\ddagger$ July $\mathbf{x} 709$.

[^28]:    IOr Pfol.

[^29]:    $\ddagger$ This fact is likewife found in a letter, printed before the anecdotes of Ruffia, p, 23 .

[^30]:    - Sept, 18. 1yeg.
    tos. 7. 1709.

[^31]:    $\dagger$ March 11. 1710 .
    $\ddagger$ April 1.
    § June 23.

[^32]:    *Sept. 19. $1710 . \quad \dagger$ Sept. 23. $\ddagger$ Aug. 25. §Sept. 10.

